

My Pioneer Canadian Family

**MY PIONEER
CANADIAN FAMILY**

Donald Walter Young

Copyright © 2023 edition, second printing, by Donald Walter Young

ISBN 978-1778352775

All photographs property of the author unless otherwise credited

Design by Mary White

with love to

Tracey, Jen, Dave, Abigail, Malcolm, Sophie and Clark

Contents

Index to Ten Generations	8
Preface	11
CHAPTER 1	
Introduction	13
CHAPTER 2	
Blake Family	25
CHAPTER 3	
Hoare Family	41
CHAPTER 4	
Hume Family	57
CHAPTER 5	
Blake, Hoare and Hume Family Connections	71
CHAPTER 6	
Richard Flood and the Blake Family	75
CHAPTER 7	
Macnider Family	90
CHAPTER 8	
Adam Lymburner Macnider and Rosina Aird	102
CHAPTER 9	
Brown and Somerville Families	112
CHAPTER 10	
Young Family	128
CHAPTER 11	
David Young and Rosina Arabella Somerville	151

CHAPTER 12		
	James Sutherland and Jane Flett	185
CHAPTER 13		
	Robert Clouston and Nancy Sutherland	209
CHAPTER 14		
	Flett Family	217
CHAPTER 15		
	James Flett and Frances Mary Blake McLean	238
CHAPTER 16		
	McLean Family	246
CHAPTER 17		
	Hopper Family	266
CHAPTER 18		
	Cuthbert Family	281
CHAPTER 19		
	Burgess Family	296
CHAPTER 20		
	James Cuthbert and Mary Burgess	311
CHAPTER 21		
	Clark Reid Hopper and Eunice Cuthbert	328
CHAPTER 22		
	Walter Beatty Young and Frances Mary Blake Flett	341
CHAPTER 23		
	Hume Blake Young and Mary Elinor Hopper	352

Index to Ten Generations

Generation 1	Chapter
John Aird and Ann Campbell	8
Dominick Blake and Elizabeth Hoare	2, 3, 5
John Broun and Margaret Cunningham	9
John Cuthbert and Janet Umphrey	18
John Cunningham and Hannah Lester	18
John Dollas and Marjory Dow	18
John Dougall and Mary Campbell	10
Peter Dudgeon and Beatrix Jonkison	9
John Flett and Margaret Smith	14
William Hume and Catherine Hoare	3, 4, 5
Robert Isbister and Christian Isbister	14
John Lithgow and Margaret Lunham	9
William Macnider and Ann Vallance	7
James Somerville (Somervail)	9
George Sutherland	12
Jean Young	10
Generation 2	
Robert Aird and Janet Finlay	8
Dominick Edward Blake and Anne Margaret Hume	2, 4, 5, 6
Arthur Burgess	19
Robert Brown and Jane Dudgeon	9
John Clouston and Isobel Wilson	13
Elijah Cunningham and Mary Ward	18
Peter Cuthbert and Elspet Dollas	18
Duncan Dougall and Janet Gemmill	10
William Flett and Margaret Isbister	14
John Flood	6
James Harvie and Elison Watson	10
Daniel Hopper and Unknown McCartney	17
William Macnider and Susannah Jackson	7, 8
John McLean and Lilly Cameron	16
Peter Reid and Margaret McKindlay	10

	Chapter
John Somerville and Janet Lithgow	9
Abraham Stevens and Ruth Andrews	18
James Sutherland and Jane Flett	12, 13
Archibald Young and Margaret Young	10
 Generation 3	
John Burgess and Margaret Irvine	19
Robert Clouston and Nancy Sutherland	12, 13
Peter James Cuthbert and Isobel Smith	18
Charles Peter Cunningham and Sarah Stevens	18
Richard Flood and Frances Mary Blake	5, 6
James Flett and Hellen (Nelly) Flett	14
David Hopper and Isabella Marshall	17
Charles Irvin and Jane Taylor	19
Adam Lymburner Macnider and Rosina Aird	7, 8
Charles McLean and Jannet Watson	16
Peter Reid and Jane Harvie	10
Andrew Somerville and Margaret Brown	9
Archibald Young and Mary Dougall	10
 Generation 4	
John Irvine Burgess and Nancy Irvin	19
John S. Cuthbert and Catharine Cunningham	18
William Flett and Nancy Clouston	11, 13, 14
John Hopper and Mary Jane McWilliams	17
John McLean and Kathleen Wilhelmina Flood	6, 16
John Reid and Margaret King	17
Robert Brown Somerville and Mary Susannah Macnider	8, 9
Archibald Young and Helen Reid	10
 Generation 5	
James Cuthbert and Mary Burgess	18, 19, 20
James Flett and Frances Mary Blake McLean	14, 15, 16
John Alexander Hopper and Margaret Lowry Reid	17
David Young and Rosina Arabella Somerville	9, 10, 11

Generation 6	Chapter
Clark Reid Hopper and Eunice Cuthbert	17, 20, 21
Walter Beatty Young and Frances Mary Blake Flett	11, 15, 22
 Generation 7	
Hume Blake Young and Mary Elinor Hopper	21, 22, 23
 Generation 8	
Donald Walter Young and Roberta Jean McKnight	23
 Generation 9	
Tracey Anne Young and Christopher David Good	23
Jennifer Robyn Young	23
John David Young	23
 Generation 10	
Abigail Sarah Good and Malcolm Hugh Good (siblings)	23
Clark Thomas Young and Sophie Claire Young (siblings)	23

Preface

Who are we and where did we come from? Who were my grandparents and great-grandparents? How did these men and women earn a living? What were they like? Where did they live? These are questions many people ask themselves at some point. Some people are fortunate to find answers to some of these queries but for others, the questions remain largely unresolved.

The goal of this family history is to shine a light on those who have contributed to my values and my gene pool—that is, parents, grandparents and great-grandparents about whom I could find information.

Documenting what I have been able to find about past family members also serves to honour their memory.

My goal has been to follow each branch of my mother's and father's family trees as far back as I could with confidence. The number of great-grandparents of course doubles and then redoubles with each generation.



This book is organized so that each family line is discussed one generation at a time in descending order. With each new generation, I follow only my direct ancestor down to the next generation. This approach ensures the number of family members being tracked remains manageable. At the same time, it allows each member of my family, including distant cousins, to learn about their past family members.

I am grateful to several family members and others who were generous in providing helpful information, including Terri Alcock, Marcia Annan, Flora and Rae Bailey, Chloe Clark, Michael Conrad, Jane Curtis, Lisa Doupe, Susan Drake, Dave Dudley, Jane Harris, Bob Hopper, Marjorie Kruger, Mary MacKay, Mary Anne McDowell, Bill McEwen, Sandy Pihl, Peter Rogers and Cherie Singer. Other important sources of information included family correspondence, brochures, photographs and my father's family tree information.

Learning about my family history has been an interesting and rewarding pastime. An equally enjoyable product of my research was to learn more about the history of Canada, Ireland, Scotland and England.

Introduction

Immigration to Canada

The first use of Canada as an official name came in 1791, when the British territory of the Province of Quebec (1763–1791) was renamed and divided to create Upper and Lower Canada. As summarized below, 36 of my great-grandparents immigrated to British North America, Upper and Lower Canada and the Northwest (now western Canada) between about 1775 and 1866, the year before Confederation. These 36 individuals came from: Scotland 18, Ireland 12, England 4 and U.S.A. 2.

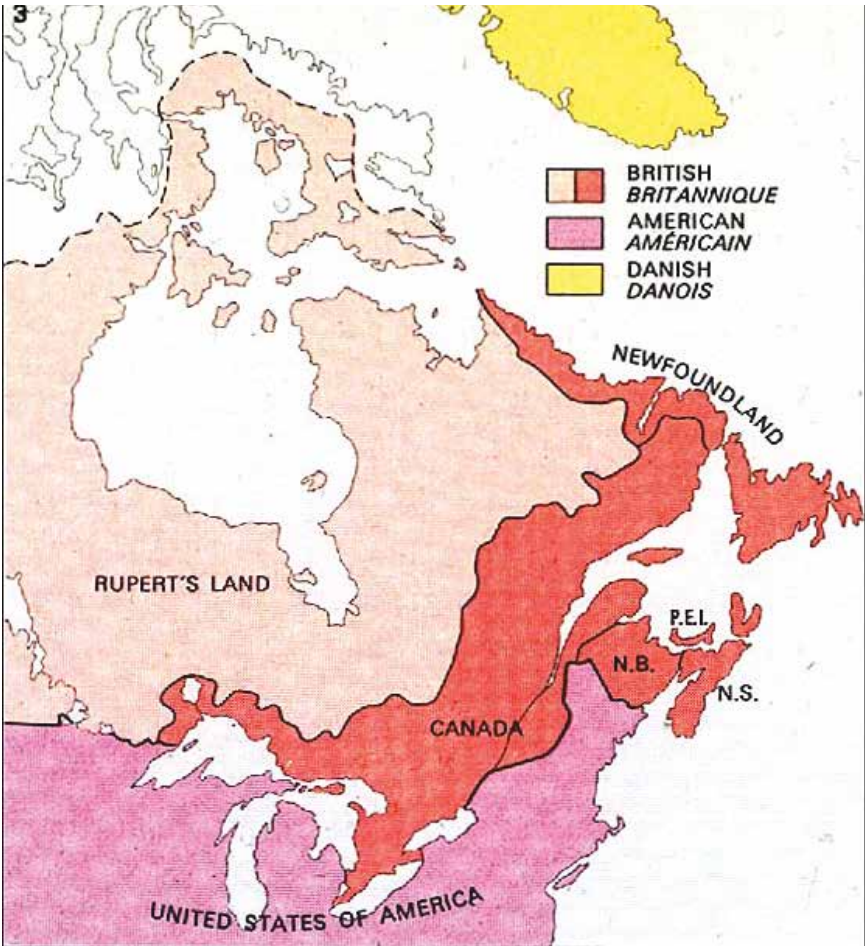
Name	Moved from	Arrived in Canada	Initially settled in
Susannah Jackson	Walthamstow, Essex (northeast) London	1775	Quebec City
William Macnider Ann Macnider	Kilmarnock, East Ayrshire, Scotland	1774–1781, 1797	Quebec City
Robert and Janet (Fin- lay) Aird	Kilmarnock, East Ayrshire, Scotland	1782 & before	Montreal
James Sutherland	Orkney, Scotland	1797	York Factory
Robert Clouston	Orkney, Scotland	1812	York Factory
Archibald and Mary (Dougall) Young, with Archibald	Paisley, Renfrews- hire, Scotland	1820	Kingston, Upper Canada

MY PIONEER CANADIAN FAMILY

Name	Moved from	Arrived in Canada	Initially settled in
Peter and Jane (Harvie) Reid, with Helen	Paisley, Renfrewshire, Scotland	1820	Middleville, Upper Canada
Charles and Sarah (Stevens) Cunningham	Vermont, U.S.A.	1824	Oxford County, Upper Canada
Mary Jane McWilliams' parents	Ireland	Before 1832	Lower Canada
Anne Margaret Blake (Hume), with Frances	Kiltegan, County Wicklow, Ireland	1832	Middlesex County, Upper Canada
Richard Flood	County Galway, Ireland	1833	Delaware, Upper Canada
Robert Somerville	Athelstaneford, Scotland	1833	Huntingdon, Lower Canada
Charles and Jane (Taylor) Irvin, with Nancy	Preston, Lancashire, England	Before 1834	Mount Charles, Upper Canada
Peter and Isobel (Smith) Cuthbert, with John S.	Aberdeenshire, Scotland	1836	Oxford County, Upper Canada
William Flett	Orkney, Scotland	Early 1840s	Fort Edmonton
John Irvine Burgess	County Fermanagh, Ireland	About 1843	Toronto, Canada West
David and Isabella (Marshall) Hopper, with John	Ballygawley, County Tyrone, Ireland	1846	Huntingdon, Canada East
John McLean	Portsoy, Banffshire, Scotland	1858	Toronto, Canada West
John and Margaret (King) Reid, with Margaret	Coleraine, Ireland	1866	Bruce County, Canada West

British emigration records show that my fourth great-grandmother Susannah Jackson (Chapter 7), at the age of 10, travelled alone to Quebec City from London, in March 1775 on the *Agnes* to live with her aunt. The voyage would have taken about two months.

Past family members who immigrated to British North America directly from Scotland were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian) and those from Ireland and England were Anglican or Presbyterian. Most of the Irish immigrants were from what is now Northern Ireland.



British North American territories in 1841. Canada was founded in 1791 with the formation of Upper and Lower Canada. The Act of Union merged these two colonies in 1841 to become the Province of Canada and Upper and Lower Canada became Canada West (now Ontario) and Canada East (now Quebec), respectively. Other British territories joined Canada later. MAP COURTESY OF THE ECONOMIC ATLAS OF ONTARIO

Earliest generations to Canada

My fourth great-grandmother Jane Flett was Cree. The earliest generation of my ancestors to immigrate from Britain was my fifth great-grandmother Ann Macnider (1729–1803). Ann was born in Ayrshire, Scotland, and died in Quebec City.

The next earliest generation to relocate to Canada belongs to these fourth great-grandparents: Robert and Janet (Finlay) Aird, Ann Margaret (Hume) Blake, Susannah Jackson, William Macnider and James Sutherland.



Memorable Manitobans

The Manitoba Historical Society website provides a description of “Memorable Manitobans,” including my past family members: Robert Clouston (fur trader); Joseph Doupe (physician); Joseph Lonsdale Doupe (surveyor); William Flett (fur trader); Clark Hopper (educator); John McLean (cleric); William Musgrove (physician); William Rose (educator); James Sutherland (fur trader); Alexander Young (engineer); David Young (physician); Hunter Young (businessman); and Walter Young (surveyor).

Pioneer experiences

Examples are provided below to illustrate the experiences encountered in the 19th century by a few of my past family members: Richard and Frances Flood, John McLean, James Sutherland and Hunter Young.

Richard and Frances Flood

On a Sunday morning in April 1843, my third great-grandparents Reverend Richard Flood (49) and his wife Frances (31) (Chapter 6) walked across the bridge between their home in Caradoc and his Delaware church. Caradoc is across the Thames River from Delaware; both communities are about 20 kilometres southwest of London, Ontario. The bridge washed away while Reverend Flood, MA, was giving his sermon.

A book published in 1877, *The Irishman in Canada*, reports on the problems the couple had in attempting to return across the river later that day:

A melancholy occurrence, which nearly proved fatal to Mr. Flood, took place at Delaware, the second Sunday in April 1843. A temporary scow was constructed for the purpose of crossing the river, now overriding its banks. Flood and thirteen others returning home from church embarked on the scow. Scarcely had they reached mid-current, when the scow was carried violently down-stream. The situation was perilous. The swollen waves laden with drift boiled

around the awkward craft and roared in angry eddies In a moment the scow was dashed against the procumbent tree . . . the scow was swamped. The whole party managed to lay hold of the tree, which the weight of fourteen persons brought on a level with the surface of the water Mrs. Flood was throughout perfectly calm and self possessed, as was her husband The names of those who perished were Captain Somers, James Rawlins, George Robinson and William Edmonds. Mr. Flood had held Edmonds above the water until he was a corpse and was himself well nigh exhausted.

In an October 8, 1846 letter, Bishop John Strachan of Toronto included the following commentary on the 1843 boating accident:

by a singular accident which happened to him [Flood] some winters ago, in which he showed great presence of mind . . . [and] by his skill and courage and his trust in God, he was able to save himself and most of his companions from a watery grave.

John McLean

My great-great-grandfather John McLean, MA, (Chapter 16) was chosen to become the first Bishop of Saskatchewan in 1874. At the time, this diocese covered most of what is today Alberta and Saskatchewan—an area of about 1.8 million square kilometres.

Bishop McLean's first visit to his diocesan headquarters of Prince Albert (population 300) was accomplished by dogsled or cariole (pronounced *kar-e-ol*) in early 1875, at the age of 46. The 1896 publication, *The Bishops of the Church of England in Canada and Newfoundland*, advises that:

a trained [dog] team over hard, open country could make forty miles a day On the morning of January 28th, 1875, Bishop McLean set out for his new home, leaving his wife and family [in Winnipeg] to go out in the following summer. It was quite a unique journey. The cariole in which he travelled was a light oak sled, with parchment sides, drawn by four trained dogs. The luggage and provisions were drawn on two sleds also by dogs. Three Indians accompanied him He held a series of confirmations and services

along the route. Thus he journeyed for more than a thousand miles over trackless wastes of snow, sometimes on lakes, at others along the course of rivers, and again through the woods.

James Sutherland

My fourth great-grandfather James Sutherland (Chapter 12) and other Hudson's Bay Company personnel were taken prisoner on May 8, 1816. By this time, Sutherland was 38 years of age and had worked for the HBC for 19 years.

James Sutherland prepared a deposition in which he described the events surrounding his detention. Sutherland's sworn deposition (courtesy of the Hudson's Bay Company Archives—E8/5) stated, in part, that:

[Sutherland] with Duncan Finlayson and twenty-six other men servants of the Hudson's Bay Company, were going down the River Qu'Appelle, District of Assiniboia, Hudson Bay, in six boats loaded with provisions, Furs and other property belonging to the said Company. They were in a narrow part of the River, suddenly assaulted by a party of about fifty Canadian Half Breeds and Indians, all completely disfigured and their faces painted in the most horrible forms in the manner of Indians when going to war, and many of them were contracted servants of the North West Company [a competitor] That the whole band were apparently led by Cuthbert Grant, Clerk to the North West Company, who has received a regular education in Montreal. That they rushed on towards the Boats with their guns cocked and presented at Deponent and party, and threatened all with immediate death, if the property was not instantly given up that some of them jumped into the River, seized the boats and dragged them ashore and made some of the men who were navigating them prisoners and finally succeeded in taking possession of everything That after Deponent was liberated he understood that all in his party, two excepted, were made prisoners and confined in the North West Company House at Qu'Appelle.

The confinement referred to in the previous paragraph is understood to have been brief. Sutherland went on to become a chief factor (a senior commissioned officer and full partner) in the Hudson's Bay Company.

INTRODUCTION

To put the May 8, 1816 event described above in context, only a few weeks later, Hudson's Bay Company personnel and Red River settlers were massacred. On the 200th anniversary of the Seven Oaks Massacre, the June-July 2016 issue of *Canada's History* magazine contained a short article that reads, in part, that on June 19, 1816:

a host of mounted North West Company men led by Métis leader Cuthbert Grant encountered a smaller group of armed men from the Hudson's Bay Company in what is now West Kildonan, a suburb of Winnipeg. By the time the last gunshots were fired, twenty-one HBC men were dead, as well as one Nor'Wester. Among those killed was Robert Semple, the recently appointed governor of the HBC territory.

On one side of the Seven Oaks Massacre were 60 North West Company First



Provinces of Canada after Confederation on July 1, 1867 in white. MAP COURTESY OF THE WIKIMEDIA COMMONS

Nations and Métis, most of whom were experienced buffalo hunters. On the other side were 32 men, including Governor Semple, Lord Selkirk's settlers, a surgeon and HBC officers and staff.

The Manitoba Historical Society's website includes an article written by Joe Martin about the Seven Oaks Massacre in which he stated:

Semple was shot in the head. A number of other people who had begged for mercy were shot in the head and some very awful things were done to the settlers in the process of killing them.

Martin suggested that those who wish to learn about this event should read the "Coltman Report," somewhat akin to a Royal Commission Report. Peter C. Newman's book, *Empire of the Bay: The Company of Adventurers that Seized a Continent* notes: "the dead were stripped and dismembered in an orgy of mutilation."

Hunter Young

My great-uncle Hunter Young (Chapter 11) received word in the fall of 1896 of a major gold discovery in the Yukon. Hunter dropped out of St. John's College at the University of Manitoba, at age 20, to head to the Yukon on June 1, 1897, with 32 other men from Winnipeg to join the gold rush. When he was about 80, Hunter made a journal of his life. In that document, he stated that not long after he arrived in Dawson City:

I met a man who had experience in a Michigan logging camp, who wanted to partner to cut logs, some 18 miles up the Klondyke [River], and raft them down to a small mill. The logs had to scale 10" at the small end and have a length of 12'. For these, they brought a price of \$100 a thousand feet.

When logs were cut, they were rolled in the water and each of us would make a raft of 10 logs. The length of time to run these logs down was uncertain, on account of sweepers, riffles, boulders, etc. seldom making the voyage without being thrown into the icy [and fast moving] water, and sometimes having to remake the raft. If it were accomplished in 12 hours, we considered we had been lucky. At that, we made good money, and I was able to salt away sufficient to

get a small log cabin in Dawson as headquarters, together with tools and provisions to enable me to do the assessment work on Sulphur [Creek, his successful claim that was about 105 kilometres south of Dawson].

Hunter sold his Sulphur Creek property in May 1898 for \$30,000 in gold dust valued at \$17 an ounce.

Multi-person tragedies

Five branches of my family have experienced multi-person tragedies:

William and Ann Macnider (Chapter 7) experienced ongoing tragedy in losing nine of 13 children—two children died as teenagers, a daughter died at three years of age, and six children died in infancy. These Macnider children died between 1759 and 1777.

Archibald and Helen Young (Chapter 10) lost three children—Susan (20), James (13) and John (9)—on August 7, 1862, in a boating accident on the St. Clair River in Sarnia, Canada West.

James and Jane Sutherland's eldest daughter, Sally (Chapter 12), died on July 6, 1829, from the premature birth of her fifth child, who also died. Her husband unexpectedly died a few months later, orphaning the couple's four young daughters, who ranged in age from three to 11.

William and Nancy Flett's (Chapter 14) two youngest children—Llewellyn (10) and Anne (8)—were tragically killed by a gunpowder explosion at Lower Fort Garry, Manitoba, on May 24, 1877, during celebrations of the Queen's birthday.

Two Hopper family (Chapter 17) siblings died tragically. In 1897, Mary Hopper (12) was singeing pinfeathers off chickens, after they had been plucked, when her clothing caught fire. Her burns became infected and led to her death. Her older brother Joe Hopper (35) died in 1917. A local paper reported that: "he was instantly killed this morning when his grain team ran away, being frightened by a freight train, the wheels of the loaded wagon passed over his head, fracturing his skull."

Six generations of Donald Walter Young's ancestors

Father	Grand-parents	Great-grand-parents	Great- (2x) grand-parents	Great- (3x) grand-parents	Great- (4x) grand-parents
Hume Blake Young	Walter Beatty Young	David Young	Archibald Young	Archibald Young	Archibald Young & Margaret Young
				Mary Dougall	Duncan Dougall & Janet Gemmill
			Helen Reid	Peter Reid	Peter Reid & Margaret McKindlay
				Jane Harvie	James Harvie & Elison Watson
		Rosina Arabella Somerville	Robert Brown Somerville	Andrew Somerville	John Somerville & Janet Lithgow
				Margaret Brown	Robert Brown & Jane Dudgeon
			Mary Susannah Macnider	Adam Lymburner Macnider	William Macnider & Susannah Jackson
				Rosina Aird	Robert Aird & Janet Finlay
	Frances Mary Blake Flett	James Flett	William Flett	James Flett & Hellen Flett	William Flett & Margaret Isbister

INTRODUCTION

Father	Grand-parents	Great-grand-parents	Great- (2x) grand-parents	Great- (3x) grand-parents	Great- (4x) grand-parents
			Nancy Clouston	Robert Clouston	John Clouston & Isobel Wilson
				Nancy Sutherland	James Sutherland & Jane Flett
		Frances Mary Blake McLean	John McLean	Charles McLean & Jannet Watson	John McLean & Lilly Cameron
			Kathleen Wilhelmina Flood	Richard Flood	John Flood
				Frances Mary Blake	Dominick Edward Blake & Anne Margaret Hume

MY PIONEER CANADIAN FAMILY

Below is a summary of my mother's direct family ancestry:

Mother	Grand- parents	Great- grand- parents	Great- (2x) grand- parents	Great- (3x) grand- parents	Great- (4x) grand- parents
Mary Elinor Hopper	Clark Hopper	John Alexander Hopper	John Hopper & Mary Jane McWilliams	David Hopper & Isabella Marshall	Daniel Hopper & Unknown McCartney
		Margaret Lowry Reid	John Reid & Margaret King		
	Eunice Cuthbert	James Cuthbert	John S Cuthbert	Peter Cuthbert & Isobel Smith	Peter Cuthbert & Elspet Dollas
			Catharine Cunningham	Charles Peter Cunningham	Elijah Cunningham & Mary Ward
				Sarah Stevens	Abraham Stevens
					Ruth Andrews
		Mary Burgess	John Irvine Burgess	John Burgess & Margaret Irvine	Arthur Burgess
			Nancy Irvin	Charles Irvin & Jane Taylor	

Blake Family

Turtle Bunbury's online history of the Blake family provides the following comments on the origins of this Galway family. Galway is a city of 73,000, located about 225 kilometres west of Dublin, on the west coast of Ireland:

The Blake family of Galway descends from Sir Richard Caddell, a swarthy and resourceful knight who came to prominence in the Anglo-Norman enclave of Galway during the late 12th century. Over the next 300 years the Blakes became one of Galway's most influential Catholic families, regularly filling the offices of Mayor and Alderman.

The Blakes are one of the fourteen Tribes of Galway. A prominent Catholic family, they have been settled in Galway since the 12th century. There are several theories as to who the first Blake in Ireland might have been, the truth being somewhat confounded by the repetition and alteration of vital names. Romantic legend claims the family descend from Sir Aplake, one of the gallant knights of King Arthur's round table. "Ap-lake" is Welsh for "the family on or by the lake."

A more likely theory is that they descend from Sir Walter Caddel, a warrior of Norman-Welsh extraction who came to Ireland

on board the same ship as Strongbow during the first Anglo-Norman migration in 1169. Richard de Clare, 2nd Earl of Pembroke, Lord of Leinster, Justiciar of Ireland (1130–1176), also known as Strongbow, was a Cambro-Norman (or Anglo-Norman) lord, notable for his leading role in the Norman invasion of Ireland. A Justiciar is roughly equivalent to a Prime Minister. He is said to have married Marebella, eldest daughter of Richard de Burgh, Earl of Ulster, and, “after many exploits, built himself a castle at Menlo.” [Menlo is three kilometres north of Galway City.]

Sir Walter Caddel and Marebella de Burgh had two sons. Their eldest son and heir, Walter de Caddel, married Arabella, daughter of Lord Vesey, Lord Justice of Ireland, and seated himself at the Nauls. The younger son, Sir Richard Caddel was knighted in Cork Castle, by order of King John, circa 1185 and is deemed to be the patriarch of the Blake family.

In 1185, in return for his military service, Sir Richard received a grant of the Castle and Lands of Kiltorroge, the Castle and four



Cliffs of Moher, south of Galway.

quarters of Ballimacroe, and the Town of Galway. A portrait of this Sir Richard is said to have hung over the mantelpiece of Menlo [Menlough] House as late as 1691.

The most popular ancestor for the Blakes of Galway was Richard Caddell, presumably Sir Richard Caddell's descendent, better known as "Richard Niger" or "Richard the Dark" [aka Blake] on account of his complexion. Richard Niger married the heiress of Walter Caddell, a Welshman, who had arrived in Galway in the 12th century. Richard apparently had no qualms about adopting his wife's name in order to acquire her father's fortune but it was his nickname that ultimately survived when the word "Niger" was anglicized to "Black" and thence to "Blake." The eldest son of the main branch of the Blakes – or "The Blakes of Renvyle," as they were called by Martin Joseph Blake – would use the name "Caddell," before or after "Blake," for the next three hundred years. Richard Niger was knighted by Edward I [King of England] in 1277 and became the first member of the family to bear arms.

In 1278, Richard Niger was granted the castle at Kiltorroge and the lands of Ballim'croe [now Carnmore] near Dunkellin in County Galway. In 1290, Richard was appointed Portreeve, or "port warden," of the town of Galway by Richard de Burgh, the Red Earl of Ulster in 1290. The town had been enclosed within a wall from 1270, becoming a lone outpost of English influence in the West.

Richard Niger was again appointed Portreeve in 1312. In both instances, his role would have been that of fiscal supervisor, much like a modern customs officer. In the latter tenure of office, he may have also acted as a representative of the people, ensuring their duties to the Mayor and community were fulfilled. This was an age in which Galway was rapidly evolving into an independent city-state with a merchant oligarchy that controlled and promoted trade contacts all over Europe. It traded in wine, spices, salt, animal products and fish.

The wealth of its [Galway's] citizens was expressed in the many fine stone-faced buildings, most notably the Church of St. Nicholas of Myra [aka Santa Claus], started in 1320. From 1303 to 1306, Richard was also Sheriff of Connaught. The resurgence of native

Irish power obliged the Galway merchants to construct extra walls around the settlements in 1312.

In 1315, the year of Edward the Bruce's ill-fated invasion of Ireland, Richard obtained a grant from Thomas de Hoberge for the manor and lands of Kiltullagh, a former O'Kelly stronghold near Loughrea.

A modern day tourist brochure published by Galway city notes that:

Galway is best known as the "City of Tribes," which dates back to between the 13th and 16th centuries when 14 wealthy merchant families mainly of English origin commanded the commercial, political, and social development of Galway. In 1396, Richard II [of England] granted a charter to the city, which effectively transferred power to these 14 merchant families or "tribes." These Catholic merchant families were mockingly referred to as the "Tribes of Galway" by Cromwell's forces during their invasions in the 1650s; however, the Tribes later adopted this title as a mark of defiance These 14 tribes include the Blakes Medieval Galway became a powerful city-state. It traded in wine, spices, salt, animal produce and fish and became the next port after London and Bristol.

The aftermath of the Parliamentary [Cromwell] and Religious Wars of the 17th century saw Galway much reduced in status. A partial recovery based on its waterpower industries occurred during the 19th century.

The founder of the [Blake] family was a Welshman named Richard Caddell, who was nicknamed "black" or "blake," and Blake subsequently became the new surname. The Blakes became one of the most prominent and prosperous of the Tribes, with several of them holding offices as Mayor, Bailiff and Sheriff.

Blake's Castle is now the front facade for KC Blake's Restaurant, on the waterfront in the centre of Galway city.

Blake's Castle acted as Galway's prison from the late 17th century to the early 19th century. Often overcrowded, it was stated on one

occasion to be holding in excess of one hundred inmates when built to hold forty.

A 1905 County Galway book, based on the archives of the Irish Genealogical Association, provides the following information on the Blake Tribe of Galway:

- He [Richard Blake] was Portreeve of the town of Galway in 1290, and was Sheriff of Connaught in 1303–04 . . . Richard Blake was appointed Sherriff by letters patent of this Exchequer . . . afterwards on the 15th day of November came here and the said Richard was duly sworn.
- He [Richard Blake] was again appointed Portreeve of Galway in 1312, and was living in 1315, when he obtained a grant of the lands of Kiltolla near Galway. His grandson, Henry Blake of Galway, by letters patent dated February 22, 1395, was pardoned by King Richard II for rebellion, and this pardon thus records his English origin.
- Twenty members of the Blake family were mayors of Galway from 1485 to 1840, when the Corporation of Galway was abolished by an Act of Parliament.
- This publication lists a number of Blake family members who became Catholic Bishops, Irish Baronets or who received knighthoods in the 16th, 17th and 18th centuries.
- Edward Blake [1833–1912; Chapter 6], a member of the Privy Council of Canada, after holding high official position in that country, was the member of parliament for Longford [110 kilometres north east of Galway City] in the Imperial Parliament from 1892 to 1907. His family, the Blakes of Canada, descended from the family of Blake of Castlegrove, County Galway. [Castlegrove is about eight kilometres outside the town of Tuam [pronounced “tomb”], which in turn is 35 kilometres north of Galway City.]

Based on the information provided by Hugh Montgomery-Massingberd, editor, *Burke's Irish Family Records* (London, U.K.: Burkes Peerage Ltd., 1976) as recorded on the website www.thepeerage.com and the *Blake Family Records—1600–1700* written by Martin Blake and published in 1905, I have

developed a lineage that shows my connection to the Blake family starting with Richard Blake who was born circa 1250.

The Blake family lineage below was also researched by Verschoyle Benson Blake. Verschoyle Blake (1899–1971) was a founding member of the Architectural Conservancy Ontario (1933). He served on advisory committees for Upper Canada Village and Black Creek Pioneer Village, and he was instrumental in establishing Barnum House in Grafton as a museum. Mr. Blake's research into my Blake family resulted in the same lineage that I found, as described below.

Sir Richard Blake (circa 1250–circa 1315)

My 16th great-grandfather Richard Blake (also Richard Niger; also Richard Caddell) married the heiress of Walter Caddell, according to Turtle Bunbury's history of the family. By contrast, *Burke's Irish Family Records* reports that Richard Blake married Eveline Lynch. Richard Blake's children include: Walter Blake, John Blake, Nicholas Blake and Valentine Blake.

As noted above, Turtle Bunbury's online history of the Blake family advises that Richard Blake was knighted by Edward I, the King of England, when he was 27 years old in 1277. In British history, compulsory knighthood was introduced by Henry III (1207–1272) in medieval times for all those with lands of a particular value (originally £20). The custom required that all men with landed income worth more than £20 a year (in 1292, it became £40) present themselves for knighthood at the King's coronation. This was a way for the king to raise money.

Turtle Bunbury's history notes that knighthood meant increased social status but it also entailed increased costs, as a knight's responsibilities included gifts and holding festivities at the king's dubbing as well as travelling for the king's wars with the proper equipment. In addition to the mail shirt, helmet, sword, land and war horse needed previously, the 12th-century knight needed full body armour with quilted undergarments for comfort, and mail for the horse.

Mail (also chainmail) is a heavy protective mesh shirt made of small circles of steel linked together. Chainmail can weigh up to 75 pounds. Mail protective suits were used before amour suits were developed. The daily life of a knight during the Middle Ages centered around castles, manors and fighting for his lord and the king during times of war. Much of a knight's time was spent honing his weapons and his skills as well as keeping fit.

Walter Blake

Walter Blake was the eldest son of Richard Blake. Walter Blake had a grant of the customs of Galway on December 3, 1346, firmly establishing the Blakes as one of the most prominent families in Galway. He held the office of burgess of Galway. His last will was dated March 1357.

Children of Walter Blake and Mary Browne include: Henry Blake, Sr., John Blake, Geoffrey (or Geoffry) Blake, Thomas Blake and William Blake.

In 1383, Walter's son, Henry Blake, burgess of Galway, secured a lease for 20 years on the tithes of Doflyche, near Galway, from Dermot O'Connor, Abbot of Knockmoy. In 1388, Henry was indicted for treason for joining the rebellion of Sir William de Burgh, but he was pardoned following his return to the King's allegiance in 1395, just months before Galway became a Royal Borough. Henry's brother, John Oge Blake, secured a large grant of lands at Athenry from Philip Bermingham in 1391 and was appointed Provost of Athenry in 1395.

Geoffrey (or Geoffry) Blake

Geoffrey Blake was the son of Walter Blake. Geoffrey Blake was granted lands at Athenry, County Galway, by Robert Steven on August 20, 1391. Children of Geoffrey Blake and Rose O'Grade include William and Walter.

William Blake

William Blake married Unknown Athy. William was the son of Geoffrey Blake and Rose O'Grade. He died in 1453 or 1454.

William's great-uncle, Henry Blake, Sr., through a June 24, 1421 deed of settlement, gave William some of his lands, with the remainder given to his other nephews Walter Blake and Henry Blake. William, along with Celia Blake and Henry Blake, Jr., and their cousins Henry Blake and Walter Blake, made a perpetual grant to the parish church of St. Nicholas, Galway, County Galway, in 1435.

Today, The Collegiate Church of St. Nicholas is an Anglican/Episcopal church and the only one in the city of Galway. According to the church's website:

the church is the largest medieval parish church in Ireland in continuous use as a place of worship. While there is disagreement

about when it was built, it was finished by 1320. Amongst the visitors to St. Nicholas' over the centuries, the most famous is probably Christopher Columbus who prayed here during a visit to Galway in 1477. Less welcome were Cromwellian troops who used the church as a stable for their horses after the siege of Galway in 1651. They are blamed for the headless and handless state of most of the carved figures inside the church.

In 1445, an award was made between William Blake and his cousins, John Blake and Henry Blake, Jr., to settle the disputes between them as to the division of the lands of their great-uncle Henry Blake, Sr. William Blake and his cousins referred their disputes to arbitration by Willug Burk, Lord of Clanricarde and sheriff of Connaught, and Master John, Friar-General of the Friars Preachers. William Blake was the burgess of Galway.

Children of William Blake and Unknown Athy include: John Blake, Andrew Blake and Thomas Blake.

John Blake

John Blake married Annabel de Burgo. John was the son of William Blake and Unknown Athy. He was mayor of Galway in 1487 or 1488.

Children of John and Annabel Blake include: Geoffrey Blake, Walter Blake, Andrew Blake and Peter Blake.

Andrew Blake

Andrew Blake was the son of John Blake and Annabel de Burgo. Andrew Blake was living at the time of Henry VII, who lived from 1457 to 1509. Children of Andrew Blake include: William, John and Walter.

Walter Blake

Walter Blake was the son of Andrew Blake. Walter Blake was the mayor of Galway in 1547 and in 1562. Children of Walter Blake and Miss M. Bodkin include: Marcus Blake, Robert Blake of Ardfry and Martin Blake.

Robert Blake of Ardfry (circa 1565–1615)

My ninth great-grandfather Robert Blake was the son of Walter Blake and Miss Bodkin. Robert was born, about 1565, in Menlough (also Menlo), Galway.



Menlo Castle, built in 1569, was the main home of the Blake family (for male heirs) until it tragically burned down in 1910. JAMES TRAVERS / FOTOLIA

He married Catherine (or Katharine) D’Arcy, daughter of Richard D’Arcy and granddaughter of Nicholas D’Arcy of Kiltulla, County Galway. The D’Arcy family was very well positioned in Irish society. Robert died on December 15, 1615. His May 12, 1612 will was probated on May 2, 1616 in Tuam, County Galway. Tuam is 35 kilometres north of Galway City.

King James I granted Robert Blake letters patent for Ardfry in County Galway. He was also granted lands in County Mayo. He lived at Ardfry, Ballynacourt, County Galway. Ardfry is 15 kilometres south of Galway city on the coast. The town of Mayo is about 150 kilometres northeast of the city of Galway.

Children of Robert Blake and Catherine D’Arcy include: Sir Richard Blake (died 1663), Peter Blake, Nicholas Blake (died 1682), Henry Blake, John Blake, Francis Blake and Andrew Blake.

John Burke’s 1836 publication on the *Commoners of Great Britain and Ireland* noted that the eldest son was “the Right Honourable Sir Richard Blake of Ardfry, of the privy council in the time of Charles I, Member of Parliament for Galway in 1639 and speaker of the supreme council of confederated Catholics, at Kilkenny, in 1648. From Sir Richard lineally descends the noble house of Wallenscourt.”



Blake's Castle façade.

Andrew Blake

Andrew Blake was the seventh son of Robert Blake and Catherine D’Arcy. “Among the descendents of Andrew were the Blakes of Castlegrove, Netterville and Canada.” He lived at Fartygar, Kilbennan, County Galway (or Castlegrove). Alternate spellings of the Castlegrove property, located eight kilometres outside the town of Tuam, County Galway, are Fartigare and Feartagar.

Andrew Blake of Fartigare (Castlegrove), County Galway, seventh son of Robert Blake of Ardfry, received the lands at Fartigare under the will of his father. He married Elizabeth, second daughter of Sir Valentine Blake, third Baronet of Menlo, and Dame Ellinor Lynch by whom he had a son and heir, Dominick Blake.

Turtle Bunbury’s online history of the Blake family records that:

Sir Valentine Blake [third baronet of Menlo] was stripped of his property and died in prison following his failed defence of Galway from Cromwell’s army [1651]. The family seat at Menlo Castle was saved by Sir Valentine’s brother Walter, a merchant in Suffolk [eastern England] who made a fortune through wine and wool.

Dominick Blake

Dominick Blake of Fartigare (Castlegrove) was living in 1716. He married Jane, daughter of John Darcy of Gorteen, and had a son and heir, Andrew Blake.

Andrew Blake

Andrew Blake of Fartigare (Castlegrove) married Sibilla Blake, eldest daughter of Martin Fitz Peter Blake of Ballyglunin in 1723. Sibilla Blake’s parents were Martin Blake and Margaret French. Andrew Blake of Castlegrove, who was living in 1739, had a son and heir, Dominick Blake.

Verschoyle Benson Blake noted



The Galway Civic Trust crest on the wall of the Blake’s Castle façade states that: “Blake’s Castle is one of the two remarkable castles of the fourteen Tribes of Galway depicted in the 1651 map of Galway. It was used as the county jail from 1684 to 1810.”



that Sibilla Blake was a direct descendant of Walter Blake, brother of William (see Geoffrey Blake above).

Dominick Blake (died circa 1780)

Dominick Blake was admitted to Middle Temple on August 3, 1739. Middle Temple is one of four “Inns of Court” exclusively entitled to call their members to the English Bar as barristers. Dominick lived at Castlegrove.

Dominick’s first marriage, on September 17, 1753, in St. Mary’s Church, Dublin, was to Frances (1733–1764), the eldest daughter of Nicholas, fifth Viscount of Netterville. Dominick and Frances had two sons and one daughter before her death in May 1764. Their children were Andrew Blake (heir to Castlegrove), Netterville Blake and Catherine Blake. Captain Netterville Blake, who succeeded to another estate close to the town of Tuam, was the ancestor of Blake of Newborough. Netterville and his wife, Bridget, the eldest daughter of Xaverius Blake, had 14 children—nine sons and five daughters.

Dominick’s eldest son and heir, Andrew Blake, was admitted to Middle Temple in November 1773, and after 1784, he married Isabella, daughter of John Knox and the “widow and relict” of Xaverius Blake. John Knox also went by the nickname “Diamond Knox.” John Knox gave Isabella Knox £10,000 on her marriage, and later, the famous Knox Diamonds. He lived at Castlereagh, County Roscommon, Ireland.

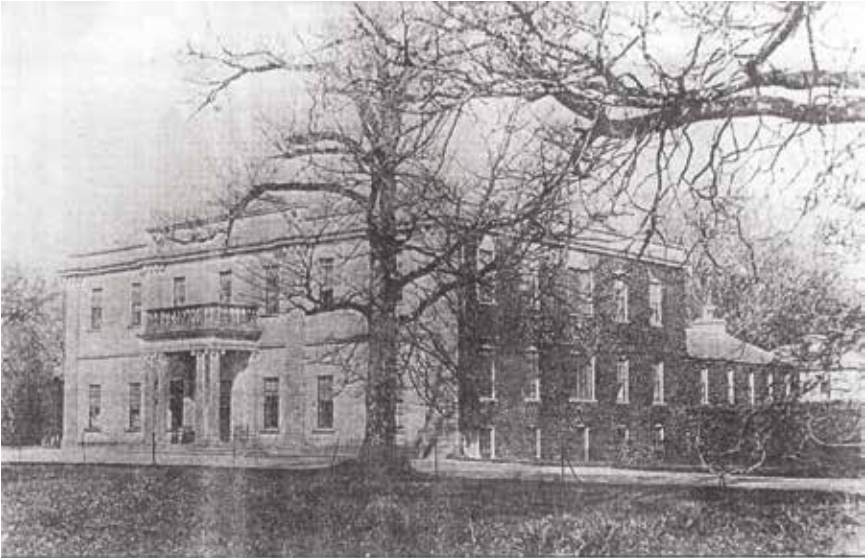
Andrew Blake died, about 1825, and was succeeded by son and heir, Edward Blake, who was the last Blake proprietor of Castlegrove. Edward Blake died on March 15, 1869, and his will was proved on September 16, 1869.

Castlegrove, including over 2,300 acres of land, was listed for sale by Edward Blake in November 1852, and sold to John Cannon in February 1853.

Dominick Blake’s second marriage, in 1770, was to Elizabeth Hoare (Chapter 5), daughter of Sir Joseph Hoare (Chapter 3), first Baronet of Annabelle, County Cork.

Dominick and Elizabeth Blake had four sons: Dominick Edward Blake, born circa 1772 (Chapter 5), Joseph Blake, Samuel Blake and William Martin Blake. Dominick Edward Blake was my fourth great-grandfather.

Dominick Blake died circa 1780. His September 14, 1779 will was



Castlegrove House (1895 picture) was a three-storey Georgian mansion built around 1840 and located about 100 metres from Feartagar Castle. A write up about the property says that “the most famous of its landlords was Edward Blake.” The story notes that the mansion “was a magnificent structure and was one of the finest houses in County Galway” and that Edward Blake (d. 1869) was the last Blake owner of Castlegrove, including the 2,300 acres of property surrounding it. IMAGE COURTESY OF THE IRISH ARCHITECTURAL ARCHIVE

proved on January 13, 1827. In 1788, Elizabeth married Colonel James Bulkeley of Huntley Hall.

Irish historian Richard Killeen has advised that by about the year 1700, Catholics owned less than 10% of the land in Ireland. The Protestant Ascendancy passed onerous laws to penalize Catholic land ownership. At that time, land ownership meant power. Laws were also passed to forbid Catholics from practicing law, holding public office or bearing arms.

While the Blake family of Galway was originally Catholic, the Blakes of Castlegrove had converted to the Church of Ireland (Anglican or Episcopalian), likely well before 1739 when Dominick Edward Blake’s father, Dominick Blake, became a lawyer.

Feartagar Castle and Castlegrove House were owned by members of the Blake family who are my ancestors. At one time, more than 2,300 acres of landholding surrounded the castle and the house. This “castle” was used as a retreat in the event of attack.

Feartagar Castle is located about eight kilometres north of the village of

BLAKE FAMILY

Tuam on Ballinrobe Road. The castle tower was built in the 15th century by the De Burgos family. This family lived on this property until Cromwell's English invading forces dispossessed them of it in 1651. Eventually, the castle came into the hands of the Blakes of Tuam.

In 1922, during the Irish Civil War, I understand the English owner of the Castlegrove mansion and his family were chased off the property by Irish republican forces and never seen again. The mansion was immediately burned to the ground and has not been touched since that fire. The ruin is barely visible today, as it is overgrown with ivy and trees.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Blake family is related to the author's family:

1. Sir Richard Blake (1250–1315)
2. Walter Blake married Mary Browne
3. Geoffrey Blake married Rose O'Grade
4. William Blake, died 1453 or 1454, married Miss Athy
5. John Blake married Annabel de Burgo
6. Andrew Blake
7. Walter Blake married Miss Bodkin
8. Robert Blake of Ardfry married Catherine D'Arcy
9. Andrew Blake married Elizabeth Blake
10. Dominick Blake married Jane Darcy
11. Andrew Blake married Sibilla Blake
12. Dominick Blake married Elizabeth Hoare
13. Dominick Edward Blake married Anne Margaret Hume
14. Frances Mary Blake married Richard Flood
15. Kathleen Flood married John McLean
16. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
17. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
18. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
19. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
20. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
21. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Hoare Family

On New Year's Day 1883, Edward Hoare, former captain of the North Cork Rifles and of Factory Hill, County Cork, published *Early History and Genealogy, with Pedigrees from 1330, Unbroken to the Present Time of the Families Hore and Hoare, with All Their Branches*. I refer to this book as the 1883 Hoare family history.

Mr. Hoare's 1883 family history is the best and most carefully documented Hoare family history that I have found. While this chapter includes Hoare family information from other sources that corroborates and expands on Edward Hoare's work, the 1883 Hoare family history serves as a foundation for my understanding of the early Hoare generations. In the preface to his book, Edward Hoare stated:

The following account of the Early History and Genealogy of the Families of Hore and Hoare has engaged my attention for a large number of years, in consequence of a considerable number of very early deeds and documents of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, with other relics of the families, having come into my possession, and which have been the means of assisting me greatly in my investigations and researches, and guiding me into the proper paths for procuring much which otherwise might have been unnoticed and unknown. I have during that period, I may say almost



County Cork, seaside.

unassisted, amassed an immense amount of valuable and interesting information, at great labour, and much expense to myself, and which may prove also hereafter useful to future members of the families as well as to those now existing.

At the outset of the 1883 Hoare family history, Edward Hoare wrote (paragraph breaks added):

The Founder of this [Devonshire Hore/Hoare] Family was Robertus Hore, who, about 1330, married an heiress of the family of Fforde of Chagford in the county of Devon.

A very ancient and well-grounded tradition existed, well known in very many branches of the family long separated by time and distance, and supported also by early pedigrees and manuscripts, that he was a younger brother of William Le Hore or Thomas Le Hore, of Pole Hore in the county of Wexford, whose ancestor, Sir William Le Hore, was one of the fifty knights who, during the reign of King Henry the Second, went over from Pembroke in Wales, with Maurice

Fitz Gerald, Robert de Barry, Robert Fitz Stephen, and others, for the conquest of Ireland, and to whom the estate of Pole Hore and other lands in the county of Wexford were granted by Strongbow, and which still remain in the possession of his lineal descendant, the present Philip Herbert Hore, Esq., of Pole Hore. (See the pedigree of that family in Burke's *Commoners* vol. iv., pp. 712–716.)

The tradition states that this Robertus Hore was an extremely fine and handsome man, who went over to Devonshire to seek his fortune, and while there won the heart and the affections of the heiress of Fford of Chagford, and having married her settled there, and thus became the Founder of the family.

The armorial bearings of both families are in perfect accordance with this tradition, for an old manuscript of the fourteenth century states thus: "Sir William Le Hore was one of the fifty knights who went over from Pembroke in Wales for the conquest of Ireland, and at the siege of Wexford he was the standard-bearer, and bore the Standard of the Eagle, wherefore in commemoration of such he was given the eagle with expanded wings as his armorial insignia; he was also called the White Knight, in allusion to his name Hore, some suppose from his fair appearance, others say from his suit of white armour, the word hore then signifying the colour white."

The Devonshire family of Hore had for their armorial bearings the eagle with expanded wings, with two necks, within an engrailed bordure; these marks in Heraldry are frequently found given to a junior branch of a family still existing in its senior members and lines.

My Hoare family ancestors lived in or near the parish of Chagford in Devon County, England, from the 14th to the 17th century before Willelmus Hoare (b. 1602), my 10th great-grandfather, moved to London. Devon County is about 300 kilometres west of London. There is evidence to suggest that there has been a settlement in the Chagford area for over 4,000 years. Chagford is situated in the Teign (pronounced "tin") Valley and is part of the Dartmoor Forest.

Edward Hoare stated in his 1883 book that he was in possession of a "Base Silver, Early Armorial Seal having the date 1517 on the facet." He

noted that this Seal “formerly belonged to the ancient Family of HORE of RISFORD, parish of Chagford, Devonshire.”

My Hoare family lineage is provided below, starting with my 13th great-grandparents Willelmus Hore and Ms. Perriman:

Willelmus Hore (b. circa 1511) married Ms. Perriman of Devon

They had three children: Augustinus Hore, Johannes Hore and Barnaby Hore.

Johannes Hore (b. circa 1537) married Ms. Kelley of Devon

Johannes and Ms. Kelley had three children:

- Johannes Hore was a barrister-at-law. Married but no children. Buried in the Church of Chagford.
- Willelmus Hore—born circa 1578
- Maria Hore

Willelmus Hore (circa 1578–1656) and Catherine Nott (circa 1580–1625)

Willelmus was likely born about 1578 in Rushford Manor in the parish of Chagford, Devon County. About 1598, Willelmus Hore married Catherine Nott who was born around 1580 in Lapford, Devonshire. They lived in Spreyton, Devon. Catherine’s parents were John Nott and Polynora Stuckley.

Willelmus and Catherine Hore had six sons and one daughter:

- Willelmus Hore—b. 1602; my 10th great-grandfather, see below
- Johannes Hore—b. 1603
- Thomas Hore—b. 1604
- Robertus Hore—b. 1606
- Henricus or Henry Hore—b. 1608. The 1883 family history advises: “From this Henry Hore or Hoare, the families of Hoare, Bankers of Fleet Street, and Baronets (1786) of Hoare of Barn Elms in the county of Surrey, are descended.” He married a “Buckinghamshire lady” and settled near Walton, as an extensive farmer.

Hoare’s Bank—Henry Hore’s grandson, Richard Hoare, became a knight and was a partner in the Bank at the Golden Bottle located on Cheapside Street in the City of London with his uncle James Hoare who founded the bank. Cheapside was originally

a marketplace. James Hoare was the son of Henry's older brother Willelmus (see below). In the days before street numbers, signs identified businesses. This bank used a Golden Bottle as its sign. Shortly after James Hoare's death in 1696, the bank relocated one kilometre west to Fleet Street, "where the original Golden Bottle may now [1883] be seen over the doorway."



St. Anne's Shandon Anglican Church, Cork city.

On James' death, Richard became the sole owner of the bank. This bank continues as C. Hoare & Co. to this day and is still owned and operated by Hoare family members at 37 Fleet Street, Temple, London. It is the oldest bank in Britain. The bank's website today says the bank was founded by Sir Richard Hoare in 1672 and provides no reference to Richard Hoare's uncle, James Hoare, as founder, as recorded in the 1883 family history book.

- Radulphus or Ralph Hore—b. 1614
- Margaretta Hore

Catherine Hoare (Nott) died, at age 45, on May 9, 1625. Willelmus Hoare was buried, at age 78, at Chagford Church in 1656, according to the 1883 family history.

Willelmus Hore/Hoare (b. 1602) and Elizabeth Gilpin (1604–1681)

Willelmus and Catherine Hoare's son, Willelmus Hore/Hoare was born in 1602 in Rushford Manor. Willelmus lived in Risford County in Devon until the sale of the Devon property to the ancestor of the Earl of Portsmouth. After the sale, Willelmus Hore/Hoare moved to Edmonton in the county of Middlesex, London, according to Edward Hoare's 1883 book.

Willelmus married Elizabeth Gilpin in 1620, when she was 16. Elizabeth was baptised in 1604 in Edmonton. Elizabeth was the daughter of Reverend John Gilpin of Edmonton, located about 10 kilometres north of central London.

The 1883 Hoare family history records that my 10th great-grandparents, Willelmus and Elizabeth Hoare, had seven sons and one daughter:

- John Hoare—barrister-at-law of Middle Temple, London; died unmarried
- James Hoare—founder of Hoare's Bank, about 1646, at the sign of the Golden Bottle in the Cheapside market; surveyor, warden and controller of the Mint; banker to Oliver Cromwell; married twice; first marriage ("name doubtful") had one son and two daughters; second marriage, no children; he died in Edmonton on November 30, 1696
- Edward Hoare—b. 1626; my ninth great-grandfather, see below

- Abraham Hoare—see below
- Thomas Hoare—Lieutenant in army regiment raised by Committee of Guildhall, London in 1642 for the Irish Expedition; unmarried
- Charles Hoare—Officer in Mint under his brother James Hoare; married Elizabeth Hinson of Devonshire. She died on November 19, 1673.
- William Hoare—b. circa 1638; Doctor of Divinity, Chaplain of St. Saviour’s Church, Southwark, died, unmarried at 49 years of age on February 9, 1687 or 1688; buried in Ladye Chapel of St. Saviour’s Southwark in a tomb with other Gilpin family members.
- Catherine Hoare—married Captain Edward Wight of Edmonton who participated in Cromwell’s invasion of Ireland in 1649; he received land for his army services and settled in Limerick, where he was mayor in 1694 and 1711 and sheriff in 1676; Edward Wight died in 1713.

Elizabeth Hoare (Gilpin) was buried, at 77 years of age, on December 30, 1681 in the Church of St. Peter ad Vincula in the Tower of London. The church is a Chapel Royal, and the priest responsible for it is the chaplain of the Tower of London.

The Chapel Royal of St. Peter ad Vincula (“St. Peter in chains”) is the parish church of the Tower of London. It is situated within the Tower’s Inner Ward and dates from 1520. The Chapel is best known as the burial place of some of the most famous prisoners executed at the Tower, including Anne Boleyn, Lady Jane Grey and Thomas Cromwell. Elizabeth Hoare’s (Gilpin) son James (founder of Hoare’s Bank in 1646) and Elizabeth Gilpin’s daughter-in-law, Elizabeth Hinson, are also buried in this church.

Major Edward Hoare (circa 1626–1690) and Mary Woodcock (circa 1630–1690)

Major Edward Hoare was born about 1626 in London, England. Major Hoare’s wife, Mary Woodcock was born about 1630 in Kilcograne, Kilkenny, Ireland. Edward and Mary were married about 1650. Mary was the daughter of Captain John Woodcock of Kilcograne.

My ninth great-grandfather Edward Hoare, then a captain, participated in Oliver Cromwell and the English Parliamentarian army’s invasion of Ireland

in the fall of 1649. Cromwell's war continued in Ireland until May 1652. Cromwell's commander in Ireland, Major General Henry Ireton, caught a fever, died in Ireland in November 1651 and was buried in a state funeral at Westminster Abbey.

In 1661, after the Restoration of the Monarchy, British historian David Plant has advised that: "Ireton's corpse was exhumed and hanged at Tyburn. His head was exhibited at Westminster for at least 24 years." Tyburn is in London and is now called the Marble Arch.

When I visited County Cork in 2009, the sensitivities surrounding the brutal legacy of Cromwell's 1649 invading army were still very evident. The tour guide for a castle ruin provided a vivid description of how Irish men, women and children were slaughtered by Cromwell's army. A legacy that is not likely to be forgotten anytime soon!

Major Hoare began a new life, with his Irish wife, Mary Woodcock, in Dunmanway, County Cork, about 50 kilometres west of Cork City. Their first child was born in 1651. Major Hoare and his brother Lieutenant Abraham Hoare received 3,468 acres in Dunmanway, a land grant that was confirmed in 1667, for their services in Cromwell's invasion. Abraham Hoare died in Cork City in 1670, unmarried. Abraham's February 19, 1669 will was proved in May 1670, and the will notes that his brother Edward was, by 1669, a major in the army.

County Cork is situated in the southwest of Ireland. It is the largest of all the Irish counties and in many ways the most varied. Rich farmlands and river valleys contrast with the wild sandstone hills of the west, and above all there is the magnificent coastline scooped and fretted by the Atlantic into great bays and secret coves, strewn with rocky headlands and long, soft golden sands. The city of Cork's name is derived from the Irish word *corcach*, meaning "marshy place," referring to its situation on the River Lee.

Edward Hoare died on July 3, 1690, at age 64, and Mary Hoare passed away, at 60 years of age, on August 27 in the same year. They both died in Cork. In her 1659 will, Mary listed her children as: Edward Hoare (b. 1651; my eighth great-grandfather), Enoch Hoare, Elizabeth Hoare and Esther Hoare (married Samuel Terry of Cork). Mary referred to her husband in her will as having the surname Hore, according to the 1883 Hoare family history book.

Edward Hoare (circa 1651–1709) and Sarah Burnell (circa 1655–1715)

Edward Hoare was the eldest son of Major Edward Hoare and Mary Woodcock. Edward Hoare was born about 1651 in Dunkettle, County Cork, not long after his father, Major Hoare, arrived in Ireland. Edward married Sarah Burnell on March 25, 1676 in St. Finbar’s Cathedral, Cork. Sarah was born in 1655, and was the daughter of Colonel Richard Burnell of Dublin.

Edward and Sarah Hoare resided at Dunkettle and Factory Hill (located about 10 kilometres east of the city of Cork) (formerly Killcoolishell and West Ballyhinny). He became a banker and merchant in Cork and made a large fortune, according to the 1883 Hoare family history. That history also notes that he bought extensive estates in the counties of Cork, Limerick and Kerry. He was sheriff (1684) and then mayor of Cork (1686). Edward Hoare was the first person to own and drive a “coach-and-four” in the city of Cork, according to the 1883 Hoare family history. A coach-and-four is a coach or carriage pulled by four horses.

My eighth great-grandparents Edward and Sarah Hoare had five sons and two daughters:

- Edward Hoare (1677–1765; my seventh great-grandfather, see below)
- Deane Hoare (d. October 19, 1720)
- Robert Hoare
- Richard Hoare
- John Hoare (married Anne Alcock)
- Ann Hoare
- Sarah Hoare

What we know about this Edward Hoare and his family is confirmed and expanded on in a 1905 book authored by Colonel Grove White, J.P., called *Historical and Topographical Notes* of people living in communities in northern County Cork. In his book Colonel White provided information on Edward Hoare and his Irish family that stated, in part:

Hoare’s Bank was one of the earliest Irish banks. It was founded about 1675 by the brothers Edward and Joseph Hoare, sons of Edward Hoare [son of William Hoare, or Hore, of Edmonton, Middlesex, by

Elizabeth, daughter of Revd. John Gilpin], a captain in Cromwell's army, under Ireton, in 1649, who claimed, in the Court of Claims, in respect of military services in the counties of Cork, Kerry, and Kilkenny, on account of the Commonwealth, and obtained grants of land in the County Cork, near Dunmanway, to the extent of 3,468 acres, and resided at Togher Castle.

He [Major Hoare] married Mary, daughter and heir of John Woodcocke, of Kilrogane, County Kilkenny, and died at Cork in 1690, leaving two sons: (1) Edward Hoare, who became a wine merchant, established a bank in the city of Cork and rose to a position of wealth and eminence. He resided at Dunkettle and Factory Hill, was an alderman of the city, was Sheriff in 1684 and Mayor in 1686. and (2) Joseph Hoare.

The [Hoare] bank [in Ireland] was established before 1680. The troubles of the Revolution of 1688–9 found him, of course, on the unpopular side, and he escaped to England, with his three children and wife, and lived with his relations at Edmonton. His business and his bank was closed, and his properties and estates, which were valued at £500 a year, confiscated by James II's Parliament; but in the following year, on the accession of King William III, these were restored, and he, in his turn, for his loyalty and sufferings, became a grantee as well as a purchaser of lands out of the estates of the Stuarts adherents then being forfeited and confiscated.

He [Edward Hoare] returned to Cork and resumed his business, and, in 1694, was one of the trustees of the disbursement of a fund of £300, raised out of the county, particularly "for rewarding those that are employed in reducing and destroying the Torys."

He married, in 1676, Sarah, daughter and co-heir of Colonel Richard Burnell, of Garrane, County Cork, and died in 1709, leaving five sons, of whom the eldest, Edward Hoare, barrister-at-law, M.P. [Member of Parliament] for Cork 1710–1727, married Grace, daughter of Alderman Benjamin Burton, the celebrated banker, and was the ancestor of the Irish Baronets of Annabelle, County Cork [created 1784], whose present representative is Sir Sydney Hoare, Baronet.

The 1883 Hoare family history documents that there are several letters in

the British Museum (in “Southwell MSS”) from Edward Hoare (circa 1651–1709) asking for protection orders and an escort to return home, written from Waterford where he landed on his return to Ireland from England about 1670.

Edward Hoare died on November 3, 1709, at age 58, and Sarah died, at 60 years of age, in October 1715. Both are buried in St. Mary’s Shandon, Cork in a vault under the church that Edward had constructed for his family during the rebuilding of the church.

Edward Hoare (1677–1765) and Grace Burton (d. 1709)

Lt. Colonel Edward Hoare, Barr. (Barrister) was born in 1677 in Dunkettle Castle, Cork. He married Grace Burton in 1703. Grace Burton was the daughter of Benjamin Burton, Lord Mayor of Dublin. She died at a young age, six years after their marriage, on August 8, 1709.

Edward and Grace Hoare’s children were:

- Edward Hoare—baptised on August 31, 1704 and died on December 16, 1740; married Sarah Worth but no children; practicing barrister; Sarah died on November 26, 1741
- Francis Conyngham Hoare—barrister-at-law; he was born on January 4, 1706 and died in 1733, at 27 years of age, unmarried
- Joseph Hoare—my sixth great-grandfather, see below (1707–1801)
- Catherine (or Grace) Hoare—b. 1708; married Thomas Spaight of Bunratty Castle, County Clare on September 26, 1725

Edward Hoare married a second time to Ann Grant, daughter of Thomas Grant of St. Mary’s Shandon on August 27, 1715. Edward and Ann Hoare had three sons:

- Richard Hoare—(June 3, 1716–December 13, 1717)
- Benjamin Hoare—(baptised May 28, 1718–died in infancy)
- Samuel Hoare—(July 8, 1719–December 29, 1791); married but no children

In his 1883 family history, Edward Hoare advised:

He [Edward Hoare] was also a banker and merchant in Cork, and, in consequence of the capture and loss of a fleet and expedition he fitted out and was not insured, he was obligated to sell all his unsettled property. Dunkettle was sold to the Newenham family, and Factory Hill to his brother Robert Hoare.

Thomas Newenham of Coolmore, County Cork, was Robert Hoare's father-in-law, according to Burke's 1865 *Genealogical and Heraldic Dictionary of the Peerage, Baronetage and Knighthood*.

Edward Hoare was sheriff (1707) and then mayor of Cork (1710), according to the 1861 *History of the County and City of Cork*. Edward Hoare was buried, at age 88, on July 20, 1765, in the vaults at St. Mary's (now St. Anne's) Shandon, Cork.

Colonel White's 1905 book, *Historical and Topographical Notes*, provides the following information on this Edward Hoare:

Edward Hoare, of Dunkettle, M.P. Cork City 1710–1713, 1715–27, eldest son of Edward Hoare, of Dunkettle, banker in Cork. He was born about 1678; a barrister-at-law; High Sheriff of the City 1708; Mayor 1710; Lieut.-Colonel of the City of Cork Militia (commanded by the Honourable St. John Broderick). He married first, in 1703, a daughter of Benjamin Burton, M.P., the Dublin banker. She died 8th August 1709. He married, secondly, 27th August 1715, Anne, daughter of Thomas Grant, of Cork, and [he] died 20th July 1765.

By his first wife he had issue four sons and a daughter. His third son, Joseph Hoare, was created a "Baronet of Annabel, County Cork," and was ancestor of the present Baronet. Edward Hoare is one of the Sheriffs of City of Cork, who in 1775 made petition to the Lieut.-General and Governor of Ireland in reference to the city walls.

Note—The above-named Edward Hoare was M.P. at the time for Cork in the Irish Parliament. He was an ancestor of the Hoare's of Factory Hill, whose city residence was the house in Hoare's Lane, afterwards Pike's Bank, with the date on the brick.

Sir Joseph Hoare (1707–1801) and Catherine Somerville (b. 1716)

My sixth great-grandfather Sir Joseph Hoare, Barr. (Barrister) was born in Cork on December 25, 1707. “On the death of his father [in 1765], in consequence of the deaths of his elder brothers who left no issue, he succeeded to all the settled property” of his father, according to the 1883 Hoare family history.

Joseph Hoare married Catherine Somerville circa 1740. Catherine was baptised, on July 3, 1716, in Cockstown, Dublin. Catherine Somerville’s parents, and my seventh great-grandparents were Sir James Somerville and Elizabeth Quayle (b. circa 1695), daughter of James Quayle. James Somerville married Elizabeth Quayle on February 2, 1713.

Sir James Somerville was born circa 1694 and died, at 54 years of age, on August 16, 1748. James was the only son of Thomas Somerville and Sarah King, daughter of James King. In 1729, James Somerville entered the Irish House of Commons as a Member of Parliament for Dublin and represented the constituency for nineteen years, until his death. In 1736, he was appointed Lord Mayor of Dublin. On February 14, 1748, only months before his death, he became the first Baronet of Somerville for County Meath.

Sir Joseph Hoare became the first Baronet of Annabella, County Cork, in 1784. The 1883 Hoare family history notes that Sir Joseph “was appointed Advising Council at Dublin Castle, and for his eminent services as such he was created a Baronet of Ireland, by Patent dated 10th December 1784.”

Today, Annabella is a small residential area of Mallow, which is about 35 kilometres north of the city of Cork. Total population of this area now is about 500. Annabella is not an incorporated village but simply the name of a neighbourhood. Annabella comprises a small number of houses and “townlands” that appear to have been part of an estate at one time, as they have old stone walls around parts of them. Annabella is on a hillside with a great view of the countryside in all directions. My wife and I enjoyed visiting Annabella in 2009.

As a Member of Parliament and totally blind, Sir Joseph Hoare attended “not long before [he died], in his place in parliament [in Dublin], at an advanced age of 93, to oppose Union [of Ireland and England],” according to the *General and Heraldic Dictionary of the Peerage and Baronetage of the British Empire*, published in 1832.

Sir Joseph resided in Woodhill, on Hoare’s Lane, in what is now Tivoli,

Cork. Tivoli is a relatively short walk from St. Anne's Church in Shandon, on the north side of the River Lee. He was among several of the Hoare family who were prominent at times in Cork. Joseph Hoare worked as a barrister-at-law and was a Member of Parliament for the Borough of Askeaton, County Limerick, from 1761 to 1801.

Colonel Grove White's 1905 publication, *Historical and Topographical Notes*, provides the following information:

Sir Joseph Hoare, b. 25 Dec 1707, first Bart. (Baronet) of Annabella, County Cork; Barrister-at-law; M.P. for Askeaton 1761–1801; who was created a Baronet of Ireland, 10 Dec 1784, for his eminent services as advising Counsel at Dublin Castle.

Sir Joseph married Catherine, daughter of Sir James Somerville, Bart. [Baronet] of Cookstown, County Dublin, by whom he had an only one son and three daughters.



County Cork, countryside.

HOARE FAMILY

- Edward, his heir
- Catherine married William Hume, M.P. of Humewood [my fifth great-grandparents, chapters 4 and 5]
- Anne married John Peyton of County Roscommon
- Elizabeth married first, Dominick Blake of Castlegrove [my fifth great-grandparents, chapters 2 and 5] and secondly, Colonel James Bulkeley [d. 1796] of Huntley Hall.

Sir Joseph d. 24 December 1801, and was succeeded by his only son: Sir Edward Hoare (14 March 1745–30 April 1814), second Baronet; M.P. for Carlow 1769–1776 and for Banagher 1794; Captain 13th Light Dragoons; b. 14 March 1745; married 11 September 1771, Clotilda, second daughter and co-heir of William Wallis, of Ballygrennan Castle, County Cork.

Sir Joseph Hoare died on December 24, 1801—one day short of 94 years old. He is buried in the family vault at St. Mary's Church (now St. Anne's), Shandon in north central Cork City. Catherine Hoare's (Somerville) date of death is uncertain.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this Hoare family is related to the author's family:

1. Willelmus Hore married Ms. Perriman
2. Johannes Hore married Ms. Kelley
3. Willelmus Hore married Catherina Nott
4. Willelmus Hoare married Elizabeth Gilpin
5. Edward Hoare married Mary Woodcock
6. Edward Hoare married Sarah Burnell
7. Edward Hoare married Grace Burton
8. Sir Joseph Hoare married Catherine Somerville
9. Elizabeth Hoare married Dominick Blake
10. Dominick Edward Blake married Ann Margaret Hume
11. Frances Mary Blake married Richard Flood
12. Kathleen Flood married John McLean
13. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
14. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
15. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
16. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
17. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
18. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Hume Family

Humewood is a 450-acre estate located about 70 kilometres south of Dublin, immediately beside the small village of Kiltegan in County Wicklow. Humewood was owned and occupied by members of the Hume family for three centuries. The current Humewood Castle was built on the estate during the period 1867 to 1870 for the Rt. Hon. William Wentworth F. Hume Dick, Member of Parliament.

The male lineage of the Hume family of Humewood in County Wicklow is presented in *A Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Commoners of Great Britain and Ireland Enjoying Territorial Possessions Or High Official Rank, But Uninvested Heritable Honours*, written by John Burke and published in 1836.

Burke's 1836 lineage is presented below. It is supplemented with information from other publications including the 1768 book, *Marchmont and the Humes of Polwarth*, written by Julian Margaret Maitland Warrender. Margaret Warrender commented in her book that the "Homes [Humes] trace their descent from Patrick, second son of Cospatrick, third Earl of Dunbar who died in 1166." Warrender also advised that: "In the early times the name was spelt indifferently Home or Hume. In later days, the Polworth branch adopted the spelling with a *u*."

Sir Thomas Hume (circa 1355–circa 1427)

My 17th great-grandfather Sir Thomas Hume was born about 1355 in Berwickshire, Scotland, and passed away at 72 years of age around 1427. According to Burke’s 1836 book: “Sir Thomas Hume, *dominus de eodem*, the seventh generation of that ancient family in direct male line, flourished in the reigns [of Scottish] King Robert II and III.”

Berwickshire is a county about 75 kilometres southeast of Edinburgh. From the 12th century, when the River Tweed became the boundary between England and Scotland, the border town of Berwick was disputed between the Scots and the English. Control of the town changed hands 13 times but was finally surrendered to England in 1482. Duns became the main town for Berwickshire after Berwick-upon-Tweed was lost to England.



King Robert II of Scotland (1316–1390).
IMAGE COURTESY OF WIKIPEDIA

The southern two-thirds of Berwickshire is lowland, called the Merse, that supports considerable agriculture. The northern, hilly portion of the county is known as Lammermuir.

Sir Thomas Hume married Nichola Pepdie, heiress of Dunglass, circa 1379. This couple had two sons, Sir Alexander Hume (also Home) (circa 1380–1424), his successor and ancestor to the Earls of Home, and Sir David Hume, the 1st Baron of Wedderburn. In her 1768 book, Margaret Warrender noted that there were “other issue” but she did not name these children.

Sir David Hume, 1st Baron of Wedderburn (circa 1382–1469)

Sir David Hume was born about 1382 in Thurston, East Lothian, Scotland. He married Alice (or Alicia) de Hume (surname unknown), and they had sons, David (circa 1407–before 1450) and Patrick. The county of East Lothian is about 30 kilometres east of Edinburgh and is briefly described at the beginning of Chapter 9.

According to the 1844 publication *Drummond's Histories of Noble British Families* by William Pickering:

He [David Hume] was Knighted by King James II in 1448, and appointed one of the Commissioners to treat [prepare a treaty] with the English in 1449. He was Knight of the Golden Order. MSS. Hist. Died 1469.

The origin of Wedderburn for this Hume family was described by Sir Robert Douglas (1694–1770) in his 1764 book, *The Peerage of Scotland: Containing an Historical and Genealogical Account of the Nobility of that Kingdom . . .* In his book, Douglas noted that:

Sir David Hume . . . got from his father the lands of Thurston in East-Lothian and being a youth of a noble and undaunted spirit, was greatly esteemed by Archibald, earl of Douglas, who appointed him his *scutifer*, or armour-bearer, *et pro servitiis suis multipliciter impensis et impendendis*, and made him a grant of the lands and barony of Wedderburn, which became the chief title of his family, whereupon he got a charter from the said earl, *anno* 1413, which was afterwards confirmed by a charter under the great seal, *terrarum baroniae de Wedderburn*, lying in the earldom of March, and shire of Berwick, to the said David, and his heirs whatsoever, dated 19th of April 1430.

Sir David Hume died in 1469, at 87 years of age. This Hume family built a Georgian mansion (“Wedderburn Castle”) in 1771 near Duns. This mansion is still owned by the descendants of Sir David Hume, and it is used exclusively for weddings and special occasions.

David Hume (b. circa 1407)

David Hume (circa 1407–before 1450) married Elizabeth Carmichael (circa 1410–circa 1495) in 1431. David was born in Wedderburn Castle, Berwickshire. David and Elizabeth’s children were: Sir George Hume, 2nd Baron of Wedderburn (b. circa 1432), Patrick Hume of Polwarth, and Sibilla Hume. David died before his father, Sir David.

Sir Patrick Hume, 1st Baron of Polwarth (b. circa 1434)

In her 1768 book, *Marchmont and the Humes of Polwarth*, Margaret Warrender advised that Patrick Hume (b. circa 1434) who was “the son of David Hume and grandson of Sir David Hume, 1st Baron of Wedderburn” married Margaret Sinclair, the third daughter and co-heiress of John Sinclair (circa 1397–circa 1466) of Herdmanston, from whom he received the lands and barony of Polwarth. Polwarth is a small village located in Berwickshire, 70 kilometres southeast of Edinburgh.

Warrender went on to say: “The marriage of Margaret Sinclair with Patrick Hume, the younger of the [Hume] brothers, carried the lands of Polwarth into the possession of a family whose descendants in the male line enjoyed them for upwards of three hundred years” (to the date of this 18th-century publication).

In the 1716 publication, *The Peerage of Scotland: Containing an Historical and Genealogical Account of the Nobility of that Kingdom*, author George Crawfurd recorded that Sir Patrick Hume was a “war-like Man.” Crawfurd noted that Patrick Hume proved his valour in battle on several occasions, especially at the Siege of Roxburgh, where King James II (1430–1460) was slain, and in other actions between the Scots and the English. James II was crowned at six years of age, after his father was assassinated.

In her 1768 book, Warrender wrote that this Patrick Hume “was a man of great personal bravery, and distinguished himself in the defence of the Borders against the encroachments of the English.”

Patrick and Margaret Hume had a son and heir, Patrick. According to Crawfurd’s 1716 book, their son Patrick inherited his “Father’s Valour and martial Qualities, as well as his Fortune.”

Sir Patrick Hume, 2nd Baron of Polwarth (d. 1504)

Margaret Warrender advised in her 1768 book that Sir Patrick Hume first married Margaret Edmonstone, daughter of Sir John Edmonstone. Patrick and Margaret had a son Alexander, his heir.

Warrender also noted that Patrick Hume’s second wife was Helen (married 1480), daughter of Sir James Shaw of Sauchie and widow of Archibald Haliburton, 4th Lord of Haliburton of Dirleton. Patrick Hume and Helen Shaw had a son George and four daughters.

Margaret Warrender stated that:

HUME FAMILY

Sir Patrick owned great wealth and vast possessions. No fewer than seven charters under the Great Seal were granted to him of different lands and baronies; and when in 1493 he wished to go on a pilgrimage, Henry VIII (1491–1547) of England sent him special safe-conduct to pass through his dominions. James IV (1473–1513) [of Scotland] treated him with the highest favour, and in 1499 appointed him Comptroller of Scotland which office he discharged till the year 1502.

Crawford observed in his 1716 book that: “He [Patrick] made a very great Figure in the Time of King James IV [and] was much in that Prince’s Favour, who bestowed upon him many Lands in the Counties of Stirling and Perth.” (Note: In this publication, “s” is written as “f.”) Sir Patrick Hume retired as Comptroller in 1502, after serving with “singular Ability and Integrity,” according to Crawford.

Sir Patrick Hume died in 1504 and was interred “with his Ancestors in the Collegiat-Church of Dunglass,” according to Crawford’s 1716 publication.



Humewood Castle.

This church is now in the care of Historic Scotland and a key attraction that my wife and I enjoyed visiting in East Lothian County in 2018.

Alexander Hume, 3rd Baron of Polwarth (d. 1532)

My 12th great-grandfather Alexander Hume (d. 1532) was the third Baron of Polwarth. Burke advised in his 1836 book:

This nobleman m. first, Margaret, daughter of Robert, second Lord Crichton of Sanquhar, ancestor of the Earl of Dumfries, and got a charter under the great seal: “Alexandro Hume de Polworth et Margarettae Crichton ejus sponsae terrarium de Bregamsheils, etc.” dated 26th July, 1511: by her he had three sons, viz. Patrick, his heir, Alexander, of Heugh and Gavin.

Burke reported in his 1836 and 1852 books that Alexander Hume and Margaret Crichton had three sons including Gavin, my 11th great-grandfather. In addition, Crawford’s 1716 book noted that when he died in 1532 he had three sons: “Patrick, Son and Heir, Alexander, of whom sprung the Humes of Heugh, Gavin, first of the Branch of Rhodes.”

Crawford in his 1716 history also referred to Alexander’s second marriage to Margaret, daughter of Robert Lawder (Lauder) of Bass as well as three daughters: Margaret, Catharine and Isobel. The 1716 publication does not record which sons and daughters came from each of Alexander’s two marriages. In his 1764 book, Robert Douglas advised that Alexander’s three daughters came from his second marriage but it does not mention Gavin.

In her 1768 book on the Humes of Polwarth, Margaret Warrender reported that Alexander had three sons—Patrick, Alexander and Gavin—by his first marriage and three daughters by the second marriage. The author described Gavin in this history as the ancestor of the Humes of Rhodes.

Gavin Hume

Gavin Hume was the son of Alexander Hume and Margaret Crichton. In his 1836 genealogical publication, John Burke advised, in part:

Gavin Hume, afterwards styled “Captain of Tantallon” espoused the cause of Queen Mary [Mary, Queen of Scots], and served as

lieutenant under James [Hamilton], (2nd) Earl of Arran, Duke of Chatelherault [should be Châtellerauld]. Subsequently, an officer in the Gens d'Armes, he took part in the famous 1557 Battle of St. Quintins [*sic*] [France] and his military skill and bravery on that occasion are recorded by many French and other historians. [St. Quentin is a town in northeast France.]

In 1853, John Hayter published an essay on the family history of Miss Charlotte Anna Hume (1830–1899) of Humewood in a book, *The Court Album of Twelve Portraits of The Female Aristocracy*, published in London. Charlotte Hume was the granddaughter of William Hoare Hume (1772–1815) and the only child of William Wentworth Fitzwilliam Hume (see narrative below for William Hoare Hume). In his essay, Hayter explained that:

On the failure of the Queen's [Mary] armies, he [Gavin] entered the French Gens d'Armes, at that time a corps of gentlemen volunteers. His military skill and bravery at the Battle of St. Quentin's, in 1557, are the theme of praise among the French historians.

Du Thou, especially, in his account of this engagement, mentions that "the second breach was given to be defended by Hume, the Lieutenant of the Earl of Arran." Coligni, also, in his "Commentaries," attributes to Gavin Hume the chief merit of the military skill displayed on the occasion—adding, in the same volume, that Hume and several other Scotch gentlemen were taken prisoners.

Gavin married a French lady of large fortune and noble descent.

Gavin Hume and his French wife had a son and successor, Andrew Hume, who returned to Scotland.

Andrew Hume (d. 1594 or 1595)

In his 1836 book, John Burke advised that Andrew Hume purchased the estate of Rhodes, near the land of his cousin, the first Sir John Hume of North Berwick. North Berwick is about 40 kilometres east of Edinburgh. He also noted that Andrew Hume married Mosea Seaton (Seton), daughter of Seaton of Barnes and niece to the Earl of Winton.

There is a Port Seton, 25 kilometres east of Edinburgh and immediately west of North Berwick, that is connected to this Seton family.

Wikipedia explains that the first Earl of Winton, Robert Seton (1553–1603) was a devoted Roman Catholic and one of the Scottish peers who supported Mary, Queen of Scots. His early education was in France. Robert Seton's father was George Seton, the 7th Lord Seton. Upon the death of his father in 1586, Robert became the 8th Lord Seton.

Robert Seton was created Earl of Winton at Holyroodhouse on November 16, 1600. Today, the Palace of Holyroodhouse is King Charles' official residence in Edinburgh.

John Seton (1553–1594) was the 1st Baron of Barnes, third son of George Seton and a brother of Robert Seton, Earl of Winton. John Seton is very likely Mosea Seton's father.

The lineage that connects Andrew Hume and Sir Thomas Hume (below) is murky. There are three options that I have found of how these two people could be connected. Each option results in Sir Thomas Hume (d. 1668) being either the son or grandson of Andrew Hume. The three options are as follows:

1. Thomas Hume is the son of Andrew Hume and Mosea Seton.
2. Thomas Hume is the son of Andrew Hume and a woman other than his wife.
3. Thomas Hume is the son of Andrew Hume's daughter and her husband George Hume of Pinkerton. This couple is said to have had four sons: Robert, Thomas, John and William.

Option two is raised in Turtle Bunbury's online history website about the Hume family. Option three is proposed by John Burke in his 19th-century publications.

Andrew Hume's children are often listed as Robert, Thomas, John and William. Andrew Hume died in 1594 or 1595.

Sir Thomas Hume (d. 1668)

In his 1836 publication, John Burke provided the following information about Sir Thomas Hume:

- Thomas Hume became the “confidential favourite” of Sir John

Preston, Earl of Desmond. Through the influence of that nobleman's daughter, Elizabeth, Duchess of Ormonde, Thomas Hume obtained the hand in marriage of Miss Anne French, a great heiress. Miss French was a niece of the Duchess of Ormond. As a result of these arrangements, Thomas Hume settled in Ireland. After the Restoration of the English, Scottish and Irish monarchies in 1660, Thomas Hume acquired large tracts of land in County Tipperary, in south-central Ireland, under grant from the Crown in February 1665. [For reference, County Tipperary is 200 kilometres southwest of the Humewood estate.]

- In 1665, Thomas Hume was presented the “freedom of the city of Dublin in a silver box” and subsequently enjoyed the honour of knighthood from the Duke of Ormond, then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.
- Sir Thomas Hume died “at an advanced age” on July 4, 1668, with no children and no will. Sometime before his death, he had invited his nephew Thomas [the eldest son of his brother Robert] to come from Scotland and be his sole heir. As there was no will at the time of his death, most of Sir Thomas' estate fell to his wife, Lady Anne Hume [French].
- Lady Anne came to a compromise with her husband's nephew for a sum of money. Lady Anne remarried; her second husband predeceased her. She died in early March 1701, leaving an important portion of her estate to her late husband's nephew, Thomas Hume.

Turtle Bunbury's online history of Humewood records that:

He [Thomas Hume] was awarded substantial lands in Tipperary “on account of his sufferings for the King and for King Charles I.” Much of this estate had been seized from Lieutenant-Colonel William Moore, an Anabaptist apparently attainted for high treason for attempting to surprise Dublin Castle in 1663.

In his 1853 essay on the history of the Hume family of Humewood, John Hayter said:

Thomas Hume went over to Ireland in the reign of King Charles the Second, with the Duke of Ormond, then Lord Lieutenant of that kingdom, and having acquired the favour of Elizabeth, Duchess of Ormonde, through her father, the celebrated John Preston, Earl of Desmond, whose confidence he enjoyed, he obtained, through the Duchess' influence, the hand of her Grace's niece and ward, Miss French, a great heiress. He settled in Ireland, having obtained large grants of land in Tipperary from the Crown, and died at an advanced age in 1688 [*sic*], being succeeded by his nephew, Thomas Hume. Amongst other of his estates was that of Humewood, in the county of Wicklow.

Thomas Hume (d. 1718)

In his 1836 publication, Burke noted that Thomas Hume, the nephew, married Jane Lauder of County Leitrim, Ireland. Thomas' parents were Robert Hume and Anne Mitchelson, according to Turtle Bunbury. Burke also noted that Anne's father was Dr. Mitchelson, Laird of Brackness.

Thomas Hume and Jane Lauder had four children: William, his heir, George (died young), Robert and Catherine. Robert Hume became the ancestor of the Humes of Lisanure Castle in County Cavan and of Cariga, in Leitrim and of the Humes of Dublin.

In his publication, Burke also stated that this Thomas Hume "purchased the estate of Humewood, in the county of Wicklow." This appears contrary to Hayter's statement above. Turtle Bunbury's history documents that this Thomas was the first in the Hume family to live at Humewood, where a castle had been built in the 15th century.

Burke advised that in 1704, Thomas Hume "settled" Humewood to his eldest son, William. Further, Burke stated that Thomas Hume also divided his property in County Cavan (175 kilometres north of Dublin) among his younger children.

Thomas' second wife was Elizabeth Galbraith, widow of Major Hugh Galbraith (d. 1704). It appears she came into the marriage with children who shared in the Cavan property, as Thomas and Elizabeth had no children together. Thomas Hume died in 1718.

William Hume (d. 1752)

William Hume, Thomas' eldest son and heir, married Anna Dennison, daughter of John Dennison of the city of Dublin. The couple had two sons, George (the heir) and Dennison, who died without children, and four daughters, Isabella, Sarah, Catherine and Margaret. He "settled" the Humewood estate to his eldest son, George, on December 6, 1744. William died on May 26, 1752.

George Hume (d. 1765)

George Hume of Humewood married Anna Butler, daughter of Thomas Butler of Ballymurtagh in County Wicklow. This couple had five sons, William, George, Dennison, John La Touch and Clement, as well as two daughters, Isabella and Anna. George Hume died in August 1765, and was succeeded by his eldest son, William.

William Hume (1747–1798)

About 1771, William Hume of Humewood married Catherine Hoare, daughter of Sir Joseph Hoare (1707–1801) (chapters 3 and 5), Baronet and Member of Parliament for Annabella, County Cork. William and Catherine Hume had two sons and four daughters. Sons were William Hoare Hume and Joseph Samuel Hume. Daughters were Catherine Hume, Anne Margaret Hume (my fourth great-grandmother, chapters 5 and 6), Jane Hume and Grace Hume.

William Hume of Humewood represented County Wicklow in two successive parliaments. William won the 1789 election by a significant majority, and he was also returned to parliament in 1796 when he ran uncontested.

William Hume was shot by a party of rebels in the Wicklow Mountains on October 8, 1798.

Turtle Bunbury's online history of Humewood states:

the Captain [William Hume] must have known his life was in danger for some time. On September 10th 1798, *The Times* reported a run-in with Joseph Holt's rebels in which a bullet "passed through the crown of his hat." The Humewood Cavalry later surprised a posse of Holt's "ruffians" as they were burning houses in the Glen



St. Peter's Anglican Church, Kiltegan, Ireland.

of Imail “and killed several with muskets in their hands.” However, on 22nd September, thirteen of the Captain's men were ambushed and murdered while taking refreshments at a supposedly friendly house near Baltinglass [only about five kilometres from Kiltegan and Humewood]. Captain Hume's death in a skirmish near the Glen three weeks later sent panic rippling through the loyalist community but, as it happened, it was one of the last significant events of the rebellion.

William Hoare Hume (1772–1815)

After the death of William Hume in 1798, his son William Hoare Hume (b. 1772) assumed responsibility for Humewood, at age 26. William Hoare Hume was elected in 1799, by a large majority, to fill the vacancy in parliament which resulted from his father's untimely death the prior year. William Hoare Hume continued to represent Wicklow in the Irish and Imperial (English) parliaments until his death in November 1815, at 43 years of age. William Hoare Hume was the brother of my fourth great-grandmother, Anne Margaret Hume (chapters 5 and 6).

HUME FAMILY

William Hoare Hume of Humewood married Charlotte Anne Dick, daughter of Samuel Dick (died 1802) of Dublin and sister to Quintin Dick (1777–1858), Member of Parliament for Maldon in eastern England. Samuel Dick was a wealthy East India merchant. William and Charlotte had three sons—William Wentworth Fitzwilliam Hume (his heir), Quintin Dick Hume and George Ponsonby Hume—and two daughters—Charlotte Isabella Forster Hume and Charlotte Jane Hume.

The village of Kiltegan is notable in history for the surrender of Michael Dwyer, a supporter of the United Irishmen in the rebellion of 1798. Turtle Bunbury's online history of the Hume family observes that much of the post-1798 folklore in the Wicklow Mountains concerns the rebel leader Michael Dwyer, who was the most wanted man in Ireland and finally, "in 1803, surrendered, in person, to Captain William [Hoare] Hume."



Hume vault, where some family members are buried, located at the back of St. Peter's Church, Kiltegan.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this Hume family is related to the author's family:

1. Sir Thomas Hume (1355–1427) married Nichola Pepdie (Scotland)
2. Sir David Hume married Alicia (uncertain surname) (Scotland)
3. David Hume married Elizabeth Carmichael (Scotland)
4. Sir Patrick Hume married Margaret Sinclair (Scotland)
5. Sir Patrick Hume married Margaret Edmonstone (Scotland)
6. Alexander Hume married Margaret Crichton (Scotland)
7. Gavin Hume married a French lady (Scotland/ France)
8. Andrew Hume married Mosea Seaton (Scotland)
9. Sir Thomas Hume married Lady Anne French (First Hume to live in Ireland)
10. Thomas Hume (a nephew) married Jane Lauder
11. William Hume married Anna Dennison
12. George Hume married Anna Butler
13. William Hume married Catherine Hoare
14. Ann Margaret Hume married Dominick Edward Blake
15. Frances Mary Blake married Richard Flood
16. Catherine Flood married John McLean
17. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
18. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
19. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
20. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
21. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
22. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Blake, Hoare and Hume Family Connections

The Hume and Blake families were drawn together when two of Sir Joseph Hoare's (Chapter 3) daughters, Catherine and Elizabeth, married into the Hume and Blake families, respectively.

Dominick Blake (died circa 1780) and Elizabeth Hoare

As described in Chapter 2, the youngest daughter of Sir Joseph Hoare, Elizabeth Hoare, married Dominick Blake in 1770 after Dominick's first wife died. Dominick and Elizabeth Blake had four sons before Dominick died about 1780. The couple's children were: Dominick Edward Blake, born 1772, Joseph Blake, Samuel Blake and William Martin Blake. Dominick Edward Blake's birth year is based on the inscription on the St. Peter's Church plaque and his age on admission to university.



William Hume (1747–1798) and Catherine Hoare

Sir Joseph Hoare's older daughter Catherine married William Hume in 1771. William and Catherine Hume had two sons and four daughters. Sons were William Hoare Hume and Joseph Samuel

Hume. Daughters were Catherine Hume, Anne Margaret Hume (Chapter 4), Jane Hume and Grace Hume.

William Hume's son, William Hoare Hume, was the warden of St. Peter's Church in Kiltegan when Reverend Dominick Edward Blake, his brother-in-law, was minister of the newly consecrated church on July 23, 1806.

**Dominick Edward Blake (1772–1823) and Anne Margaret Hume
(circa 1775–circa 1867)**

The Blake and Hume families were further connected when Reverend Dominick Edward Blake married his first cousin Anne Margaret Hume in 1799. Anne Margaret Hume was born in Ireland in 1775 or 1776, and died in Ontario circa 1867.

Reverend Dominick Edward Blake died on October 2, 1823 in Kiltegan, County Wicklow, at 51 years of age. Reverend Blake was Rector of St. Peter's Church, Kiltegan, County Wicklow, from 1804 until his death.

The alumni records at Trinity College, Dublin, document that Dominick Edward Blake entered university, at 15 years of age, on October 16, 1787;

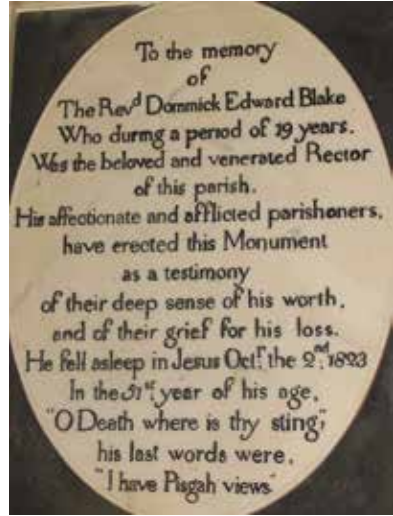


Anne Margaret Blake (Hume).

was the son of Dominick, a “Generosus” (well-born or benevolent); was born in County Galway, and was a fee-paying student.

Dominick and Anne Margaret Blake had five children—two sons and three daughters:

- Katherine (Kitty) Jane Blake—born March 10, 1800 and died on May 14, 1864; never married.
- Wilhelmina Anne Blake – born about 1804 and died in 1877; married Reverend Charles Crosbie Brough (1794–1873) in 1824. Brough was a native of County Carlow, Ireland. The couple pioneered for a time in Oro Township (Lake Simcoe, Upper Canada) and then worked as missionaries to the Anishinaabe on Manitoulin Island, Upper Canada. They spent their last years at St. John the Divine, London Township, Ontario; they had nine children.
- Dominick Edward Blake – born in 1806 and died on June 30, 1859, married Louisa Jones in 1832 and the couple had two sons and two daughters. The alumni records of Trinity College, Dublin record that he entered the university October 20, 1823, at age 17; was the son of Dominick, a “Clericus” (religious clerk); was born in County Wicklow; was a fee paying student and received a BA Vern in 1829 (Vern refers to spring). He was a missionary at Adelaide (near London, Upper Canada) from 1833 to 1844 and then served as rector of Thornhill (Toronto) from 1844 until his death, at age 53, in 1859.
- William Hume Blake – born March 10, 1809, see Chapter 6
- Frances Mary Blake – born 1812, see Chapter 6



The Archives of Ontario holds a letter documenting that a small group of Irish emigrants, including members of the Blake family, chartered a ship, the *Ann of Halifax*, and sailed to Quebec City. After about six weeks at sea, the

ship arrived in Lower Canada on September 10, 1832. A senior member of the group was Anne Margaret Blake (Hume), widow of Reverend Dominick Edward Blake. Other passengers included Anne Margaret's daughter, Frances Mary Blake and sons, Reverend Dominick Edward Blake and his wife Louisa Jones, and William Hume Blake and his wife, Catherine Hume (who was a first cousin to her husband). A leader of the passenger group was Samuel Robinson, MD, Catherine Hume Blake's step-father, who returned to Ireland about 1833.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Blake, Hoare & Hume families are related to the author's family:

1. a. Dominick Edward Blake's parents were Dominick Blake & Elizabeth Hoare
b. Anne Margaret Hume's parents were William Hume & Catherine Hoare
2. Dominick Edward Blake married Anne Margaret Hume
3. Frances Mary Blake married Richard Flood
4. Kathleen Flood married John McLean
5. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
6. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
7. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
8. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
9. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
10. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Richard Flood and the Blake Family

Richard Flood (circa 1794–1865) and Frances Mary Blake (1812–1880) My third great-grandfather Reverend Richard Flood was born in Cork in southern Ireland, according to his university records. His University of Dublin, Trinity College records also document that he was 20 years of age when he entered university on July 4, 1814. Flood received a Bachelor of Arts in 1820, and a Master of Arts in 1832. Trinity’s records note that he was the son of John Flood and that his father’s profession was “Generosus” (in Latin), which can be translated as “of noble birth, aristocratic, well-bred.” After his undergraduate program, Flood moved to County Longford (about 100 kilometres northwest of Dublin) where he became friends with Benjamin Cronyn. Flood immigrated to Upper Canada in 1833 following Cronyn, who later become the Bishop of Huron.

Flood worked as an Indian Missionary and Rector of Delaware in Upper Canada from 1834 to 1865. He was a missionary to European settlers (initially 70–100) and the Munsee (also Muncney) Indians (about 200 in 1835). An unidentified newspaper article that was attached to Richard Flood’s original register of the Diocese of Huron starts by noting that “perhaps one of the greatest missionaries that Western Ontario has ever known was Richard Flood. His name has been carried in the tales of the Muncney Indians and today that memory is revered by them as the ‘great white benefactor’.” I have



Reverend Richard Flood, MA, circa 1860 at 66. PHOTO COURTESY OF THE ANGLICAN DIOCESE OF HURON ARCHIVES

not seen documentation from the Munsee-Delaware Nation to learn how they viewed Richard Flood.

Reverend Flood (40) married Frances Mary Blake (22) in Adelaide, Upper Canada, in February 1834. The newspaper article, referred to above, described Frances Mary Blake (Chapter 5) as a “cultured young woman.” The marriage ceremony was performed by Reverend Dominick Edward Blake, the bride’s brother. Frances Mary Blake was born in Kiltegan, Ireland, in 1812.

Frances Mary Blake’s parents (Chapter 5) were Reverend Dominick Edward Blake (1772–1823) and Anne Margaret Hume (circa 1775–circa 1867). Anne Margaret lived with her daughter Frances and son-in-law Richard

Flood for many years. The 1851 and 1861 Canada West censuses show Mrs. Blake living with the Floods in Middlesex County, Caradoc Township.

Delaware is across the Thames River from Caradoc. Both communities are about 20 kilometres southwest of London, Ontario. The present village of Delaware was established in 1832 when the first house was built.

The following comments about Reverend Flood are taken from *Transactions of the London and Middlesex Historical Society*, written in 1927 and 1929 by James Talman, PhD, a history professor at the University of Western Ontario:

- Flood was a large man, six feet tall, with dark hair as a young man and quite white hair in his later years.
- In 1833, the [Anglican Church of Canada's] Bishop [Charles James Stewart] of the Diocese of Quebec [which then included both Upper and Lower Canada] agreed to give Flood permission to settle in any part of Upper Canada that he might want. After looking around, Richard Flood chose Caradoc as his headquarters, as in Flood's view it was "the darkest and most benighted corner of the province."
- As European settlers in the townships of Delaware and Caradoc did not exceed one hundred families and as many settlers did not appreciate his efforts, Flood devoted a portion of his time "to those long neglected aborigines," the [Munsee] Indians who lived about twelve miles up the river.
- Because his horse was sick and he could not afford to replace it, on one occasion [in July 1835], "starting early in the morning, but having to walk through the densely entangled forest by an Indian footpath, jumping from one fallen tree to another to avoid swamps and mud holes, devoured by mosquitoes and under burning sun" he arrived at the Indian settlement at noon, after five hours of walking. He later had a modest mission house built and rafted down the river to the Indian village so he could reside among the Indians on occasion. Within a few years, he was able to report that the Indians had become Christians.
- On alternate Sundays, he had a congregation of 70 to 100 European settlers; on the other Sunday, he gave his service in the Indian village.

- Entries in baptismal and other records make it clear that Reverend Flood was popular with European settlers as well as with the Indigenous population.
- Money, or the lack of it, was a great issue for Richard Flood. Up to 1837, he had received only £80 from the church. He estimated that it cost him £200 a year to keep his family, two servants and a few horses. Richard Flood did own a large farm in the vicinity of Delaware for which he employed others to work, but as the local residents could provide no money [at church], he was gradually using up his limited capital and worried that some day he might have to declare bankruptcy. Years later, a small allowance was provided at the suggestion of Lieutenant-Governor Sir George Arthur. When he died in 1865, he was able to leave his wife an annual income of £150.
- Richard Flood “spent the last year of his life mainly in Boston, Massachusetts, in an endeavour to recover from the frailty and disease brought on by his excessive hardships. This was unavailing and he died,” at about 70 years of age, in 1865.

On a Sunday morning in April 1843, Richard Flood (49) and his wife Frances (31) walked across a bridge from their home in Caradoc over the Thames River to his Delaware church. The bridge washed away while he was giving his sermon. A book published in 1877, *The Irishman in Canada*, reports on the couple’s misadventure in attempting to return across the river later that day:

A melancholy occurrence, which nearly proved fatal to Mr. Flood, took place at Delaware, the second Sunday in April 1843. A temporary scow was constructed for the purpose of crossing the river, now overriding its banks. Flood and thirteen others returning home from church embarked on the scow. Scarcely had they reached mid-current, when the scow was carried violently down-stream. The situation was perilous. The swollen waves laden with drift boiled around the awkward craft and roared in angry eddies In a moment the scow was dashed against the procumbent tree . . . the scow was swamped. The whole party managed to lay hold of the tree, which the weight of fourteen persons brought on a level with the

surface of the water . . . Mrs. Flood was throughout perfectly calm and self possessed, as was her husband . . . The names of those who perished were Captain Somers, James Rawlins, George Robinson and William Edmonds. Mr. Flood had held Edmonds above the water until he was a corpse and was himself well nigh exhausted.

James Talman, at the University of Western Ontario, wrote an article for the May 2, 1931 *London Free Press* about this boating accident to mark its 88th anniversary. Dr. Talman noted that although other articles had been written by various authors over the years, each article contained somewhat different details. It appears the essence of the tragedy remains as recounted above.

In an October 8, 1846 letter of introduction provided by Bishop John Strachan of Toronto for Reverend Flood when he travelled to England, the Bishop included the following commentary on the 1843 boating accident: “by a singular accident which happened to him some winters ago, in which he showed great presence of mind . . . [and] by his skill and courage and his trust in God, he was able to save himself and most of his companions from a watery grave.” The reason for this overseas trip was to allow Flood to seek rest and medication as he was still suffering from the boating accident.

The 1877 book, *The Irishman in Canada*, also relates a few stories about Frances Flood’s brother, Reverend Dominick Edward Blake. Although this may be more legend than fact, the book notes that on one occasion Reverend Blake was on an inspection tour with several retired officers and gentlemen in a township with the Governor.

Passing along a trail through the woods, the party came upon a large oak tree which had fallen across the path, fully six feet high. Each one took a look at it but did not care to try such a leap. Mr. Blake, however, in spite of the remonstrances of the remainder of the party, put his horse to a gallop and cleared the obstruction without any more difficulty than if it had been a hedge, and the occasion of a hunt with the Castlegrove pack. The remainder of the party including the Governor, were content to plunge through the mire and brushwood around the tree, until they reached the path again.

The Anglican Church of Canada’s Synod Archives includes a “Quarterly Report

from the Township of Adelaide, London District in Upper Canada” from Dominick E. Blake, Missionary. The entry for Friday, January 1, 1841 reads:

[I] went to the 2nd Concession four miles to visit a sick man. The day was piercing cold, the mercury standing at 18 degrees [Fahrenheit] below zero, but all sense of my own personal inconvenience arising from the coldness of the day quickly gave place to a feeling of commiseration for the sufferer. Stretched on a bed in a remote corner of the house lay the wretched man, covered with a few miserable rags, while snow carried by the wind through openings in the walls had accumulated to a considerable depth giving the finishing stroke to this scene of misery. The sight of a fellow-creature at the advanced age of 72, exposed to such piercing cold and wretchedness was truly heart rending but this is generally the fate of the (?) Commuted Pensioner in this country. Having promised to give him flannel and enquired into his state of mind, I gave him some suitable tracts, and promised to call again soon.

Richard Flood and Frances Mary Blake had 10 children. The first seven children are recorded in the parish records of Christ Church, Delaware, as follows:

- Catherine Ann Flood—born in the township of Caradoc on January 11, 1835 and died a year later on February 14, 1836
- Richard Flood—born December 18, 1835; he married Grace Agnes Wyatt (b. 1833 England) of Hamilton in 1862; Richard became a banker and broker. The couple had six children (four sons and two daughters). Richard died, at age 49, on January 14, 1885 in Newmarket, Ontario.
- Anne Margaret Flood—born March 28, 1839 (died before 1851)
- Catherine Wilhelmina Flood, my great-great-grandmother, was born July 17, 1840 and married Bishop John McLean (Chapter 16)
- Dominick Edward John Flood—born July 27, 1842
- William Hume Flood—born April 6, 1845
- Charles Henry Flood—born May 1, 1847

The 1861 Canadian census provides information on the couple's youngest three children:

- Earnest A. Flood—born about 1849
- Francis H. Flood—born about 1851
- Robert Flood—born about 1857

Most or all of the couple's children were born in the "white house" built by Reverend Flood in Caradoc, Upper Canada. This house still stood in the village of Delaware until at least 1927, according to Professor Talman.

Reverend Flood died in Boston, Massachusetts, at about age 70, on February 8, 1865. He was originally buried at Delaware, Canada West, but in 1924, his body was exhumed and reburied in Woodland Cemetery in London, Ontario, where the original tombstone stands. Sometime after her husband's death, Frances moved with at least one of her sons to live in Nassau, Bahamas. By 1870, her youngest son, Robert, was only about 13 years old, six years younger than the next oldest child. Frances died in Nassau, New Province District, Bahamas, at 68 years of age, on July 31, 1880.

In its October 1865 issue, the *Journal of Education for Upper Canada* carried the following:

In Memoriam: Reverend R. Flood, MA, Local Superintendent, Delaware—The Board of Public Instruction of the County of Middlesex, in reverent submission to the righteous disposal of the Most High, acknowledges its loss of the Reverend Richard Flood, MA, Delaware. This Board appreciates the many excellencies which shone brightly in the character of the departed. To all be cherished and manifested a generous and fatherly spirit. A man of sound and highly elevated intellect, be delighted to lay out his talents and acquirements in the advancement of general education.

He was chairman of this Board since the Bishop of Huron withdrew his attendance. He willingly accepted a competent and important proportion of the Board, and as long as health permitted was exemplary in the punctuality of his attendance. His candour and kindness not only endeared him to all the Members of the Board, but secured the respect of the candidates who submitted to

his examinations. It was his delight to draw out the proofs of their literary qualifications and their aptness to teach.

The Members of the Board, who had the happiness to be acquainted with the Reverend Mr. Flood, will long retain a lively impression of his gentle and loving intercourse with them in the discharge of the responsible duties publicly entrusted to them.

—John McLean, Chairman; James Skinner, Secretary

The John McLean (Chapter 16) above was Flood's son-in-law. Nonetheless, the "memoriam" is a message from the board as a whole.

The Honourable Hume Blake (1809–1870) and Catherine Hume (1804–1886)

Frances Mary Flood's (Blake) immediate older brother, William Hume Blake (1809–1870), married his first cousin Catherine Honoria Hume (1804–1886), in 1832, in Ireland. Catherine Hume's parents were Anne Margaret Hume's brother, Joseph Samuel Hume (a soldier) who married Eliza Smyth, daughter of Reverend Charles Smyth of Smythfield and Charles, County Park, Ireland. Catherine Blake (Hume) is reported in the *Dictionary of Canadian Biography Online* to have been "a pious, intelligent, and ambitious woman, who provided stability and leadership for [the couple's] . . . four children."

The *Dictionary of Canadian Biography Online* advises that:

- Hume Blake was a Canadian lawyer, judge and politician. He was born on March 10, 1809 in Kiltegan, County Wicklow, Ireland. He received a BA from Trinity College, Dublin in 1828, at age 19. From that year until 1831 he studied medicine [under Sir Philip Crampton] in Dublin, but he gave it up because he was repelled by the cruelties of the dissecting room.
- In 1832, he immigrated to Canada with his wife Catherine Hume, his mother Anne Margaret and younger sister Frances, along with other family members on a chartered vessel as part "of a group of prosperous and well-educated relatives and friends." Initially, the couple settled on a farm in Middlesex County [about 20 kilometres west of London] in what is now southwestern Ontario.
- In the fall of 1834, after discovering they were not suited to

pioneer life, Hume, Catherine and their one-year-old son, Edward, moved to Toronto. Hume Blake then studied law in the office of a leading lawyer, Mr. Samuel Washburn, and, according to the November 1870 *Canadian Law Journal*, was “admitted as a member of the Law Society in Hilary Term, 1835, and was called to the Bar in Eastern Term, 1835.” Hume Blake soon distinguished himself in the legal profession but was strongly interested in provincial political issues. In 1848, when he was 39, he was elected to the Legislature for East York [now Ontario County] and, in the same year, was appointed Solicitor-General for Upper Canada in the Lafontaine-Baldwin ministry and was named Queen’s Counsel (Q.C.).

- In 1849, he prepared an Act reforming the practice and organization of the Court of Chancery in Upper Canada. At the age of 40 that year, he resigned from the ministry to become the first Chancellor of Upper Canada.



The Honourable Hume Blake, QC.

The *Toronto Star* reported in December 1975 that:

William Hume Blake . . . is one of the most respected figures in Toronto's history When Toronto opened its first university, King's College, Blake became its professor of law In 1847, he was a Member of Parliament and, in 1849, was appointed solicitor-general in the Baldwin-Lafontaine government. In that year, the leader of the Upper Canada Rebellion of 1837, William Lyon Mackenzie, was allowed to return from exile, and mobs of angry Tories, who fought against him, burned three effigies in the streets of Toronto. One was of Mackenzie. One was of Robert Baldwin. The third was of William Hume Blake, who had become the champion of the reform party.

A month later, in April 1849, Blake rose in the House of Parliament that was then meeting in Montreal and in the greatest speech of his career he asked the house to pass the "Rebellion Losses Bill." The bill would grant £100,000 to the rebels of Lower Canada for their losses during the rebellion. Blake's speech started an uproar On April 25, 1849, the bill received royal assent and, later that night, mobs of outraged Tories burned down the Parliament building.

A few months later, by the unanimous vote of the law profession, Blake was elected to the highest judicial position in the province and became the first Chancellor of Upper Canada. He held the position for 13 years [until 1862] and died at Humewood House [in Toronto] in 1870.

The *Canadian Encyclopedia* calls the Rebellion Losses Bill one of the great landmarks of Canadian constitutional history. "It crowned the efforts of the reformers to snatch victory from the defeat of 1837. More importantly, it was the last step in Canada's evolution from colonialism to responsible government."

The Law Society of Upper Canada records that Hume Blake was a Professor of Law at King's College, Toronto, from 1843 to 1848, and Chancellor of the University of Toronto from 1853 to 1856.

Hume and Catherine Blake's children were:

- Edward Blake (1833–1912) married Margaret Cronyn—discussed below.
- Samuel Hume Blake (1835–1914) who married Rebecca Cronyn (1836–1901) in 1859 and, after she died, he married Elizabeth Baird in 1909. Samuel Hume had three children with Rebecca.
- Sophia Eliza Blake (1837–1909) who, in 1860, married Verschoyle Cronyn (1833–1920); they had five sons and three daughters.
- Anne Margaret Blake (1839–1882) who, in 1864, married James Kirkpatrick Kerr (1841–1916); the couple had two children who died early.

(Note: Margaret, Rebecca and Verschoyle Cronyn were children of Bishop Benjamin Cronyn (1802–1871) and Margaret Anne Bickerstaff (1795–1866).

On April 20, 1838, at 29 years of age, Hume Blake “bought 12-acres of land on the west side of the Yonge St. hill and had begun to build what eventually became a large Georgian-style house,” according to a 1979 *Toronto Star* article. This article and a 1972 story published in *The York Pioneer* combine to provide an overview of Blake’s ownership of Woodlawn.

Woodlawn was on a hill, with a great ballroom and a conservatory. In 1844, Hume Blake sold Woodlawn to his law partner and friend, Joseph Morrison. By 1979, only the “original north wing” was left of this elegant country home. The remaining house could be accessed by a narrow path between the houses at 33 and 37 Woodlawn Avenue. The 1979 newspaper article noted that this 140-year-old house was the second oldest home in Toronto.

In the 1850s, Hume Blake bought a farm about three kilometres west of Woodlawn on which he built Humewood House. This farm property was bounded by: St. Clair Avenue West, Wychwood Road, Maplewood Avenue and Arlington Drive. Humewood House was built on this farm around 1858.

Humewood House remained in use by Hume Blake’s family until 1870 when it burned down, according to a 1908 memo written by Samuel Verschoyle Blake (1868–1923), son of Edward Blake and a grandson of Hume Blake. Blake advised in his memo that he was born at Humewood on March 25, 1868, and his family lived there until they moved back to the city of Toronto a few months before the house burned. The Blakes sold the Humewood property sometime after the fire.

A two-acre parcel of the original Humewood property remains at 40 Humewood Drive, where the current Humewood House was completed in 1960. Since 1912, Humewood House has helped vulnerable young unwed mothers.

In March 1862, Hume Blake resigned as Chancellor of Upper Canada because of failing health, and eight years later on November 15, 1870, he died, at 61 years of age, in Toronto. Turtle Bunbury's history website reports that "after Blake's premature death from diabetes in 1870, Catherine moved to London where she lived the rest of her days with a daughter." The November 1870 *Canada Law Journal* reported that Hume Blake died "from the same disease" that killed his father, Reverend Dominick Edward Blake, at age 51.

The Honourable Edward Blake (1833–1912) and Margaret Cronyn (1835–1917)

Hume and Catherine Blake's eldest son, and Frances Mary Flood's (Blake) nephew, was Dominick Edward Blake (1833–1912). The *Dictionary of Canadian Biography Online* reports that:

- Edward Blake was born on October 13, 1833 and died, at age 78, on March 1, 1912. He was educated at Upper Canada College and the University of Toronto. Blake was born in a log cabin made by his father during his father's ill-advised and short-lived phase as a backwoods farmer on Bear Creek [Sydenham River], in the portion of Adelaide that later became part of Metcalfe Township in Upper Canada.
- Edward Blake was married on January 6, 1858 in London, Canada West to Margaret Cronyn (1835–1917), a daughter of Bishop Benjamin Cronyn. Edward and Margaret had three daughters, two of whom died in infancy, and four sons, one of whom died in infancy.
- Blake belonged to "an intensely evangelical Anglican family; his mother, Catherine Blake [Hume], in particular was rigid and oppressive in this regard." The family remained close; in 1859, Edward and his wife, Margaret Cronyn, moved in with his parents for a time in their new farm residence north of Bloor Street, Humewood.
- In 1856, Edward Blake founded the Canadian law firm now known



The Honourable Edward Blake, QC, circa 1868, at 35. PHOTO
COURTESY OF ELISABETH BLAKE BACQUIE

as Blake, Cassels & Graydon LLP, with twelve offices worldwide. The firm was launched in Toronto after Edward Blake was called to the bar and entered into a short-lived partnership with Stephen Jarvis. In 1858, Edward's brother, Samuel Hume Blake, joined the firm. Because of the success of his law firm, "when he entered electoral politics in 1867, he could publicly claim independent wealth of over \$100,000, an astonishing sum for a man of 33."

- "Blake's Liberal leadership in Canada and his involvement with the Irish cause had not precluded the continuation of his highly profitable work as a lawyer. Through a series of partnership adjustments, he carefully maintained a place in his firm, but his association effectively ended in consequence of his Irish election."
- Edward Blake served as the second Premier of Ontario for a short time from December 20, 1871 until October 25, 1872, when he resigned to enter federal politics. He was the second leader of the Liberal Party of Canada from 1880 to 1887, although he never

succeeded in becoming Prime Minister. Blake resigned as Liberal leader in 1887 and left the Canadian House of Commons in 1891, when he moved to Great Britain.

In the 1892 election, Edward Blake entered the British House of Commons as an Irish Nationalist Member of Parliament for the constituency of South Longford in the centre of Ireland. He served until 1907 when he resigned following a stroke and retired to Canada.

An article that appears in the *Beaver* (now *Canada's History* magazine) in 2000 reports that prominent historian George Wrong, Edward Blake's son-in-law, had married "into the socially impeccable Blakes of Toronto." The article notes that the Blakes had a "country place" for summer use at La Malbaie, Quebec, a small town situated on the north shore of the Saint Lawrence River, at the mouth of the Malbaie River—150 kilometres east of Quebec City.

From 1876 to 1900, Edward Blake was Chancellor of the University of Toronto.



L-R—Samuel, Edward and Hume Blake, circa 1868. PHOTO COURTESY OF ELISABETH BLAKE BACQUE

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. John Flood
2. Richard Flood married Frances Mary Blake
3. Kathleen Flood married John McLean
4. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
5. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
6. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
7. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
8. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
9. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Macnider Family

The Macnider family lived in Ayrshire, in southwest Scotland. For purposes of this family history, the common spellings Macnider and Matthew are used throughout. Alternate spellings include McNider, MacNider, McNeeder, McNiddor, McNeader, Mathew and Mathieu.

William Macnider (b. circa 1690) and Margaret Cooper

My sixth great-grandparents William Macnider and Margaret Cooper were married on August 21, 1712, as recorded in the Church of Scotland's Kirkoswald parish register. Both marriage partners are noted as members of the parish of Kirkoswald. William Macnider was born around 1690.

Kirkoswald is about 80 kilometres southwest of Glasgow. Kirkoswald means the church of St. Oswald, and the parish is dedicated to Saint Oswald, King of Northumbria. Kirkoswald is a small rural village with one main street rising up a steep hill with a few shops, pubs and its church. Parts of the church date from the 12th century. The church is unique in having its bell tower on a hilltop, 200 metres from the church.

The records of the Church of Scotland's parish of Kirkoswald document that William and Margaret Macnider's 10 children were baptised as follows:

- John Macnider—June 22, 1713 (witnesses John McNider and James Wilson); likely died at a young age

- Margaret Macnider—May 22, 1715
- James Macnider—October 13, 1717
- Anne Macnider—March 19, 1721
- Jean Macnider—August 23, 1723
- William Macnider—my fifth great-grandfather, see below, January 23, 1726 (witnesses include John Coupor, perhaps related to his mother)
- Samuel Macnider—March 10, 1728
- Thomas Macnider—November 9, 1729 and died May 16, 1789
- John Macnider—October 18, 1730
- Matthew Macnider—November 12, 1732

William Macnider (1725–1772) and Ann Vallance (1729–1803)

The Church of Scotland’s records for the parish of Ayr state that my fifth great-grandfather William Macnider was baptised in Kirkoswald on January 23, 1726. A descendant of William and Ann Macnider has advised through his 1947 family history that William was born on February 2, 1725.

William Macnider married Agnes (also Agnas) Ferguson on July 14, 1753, as noted in the Church of Scotland’s records for the parish of Ayr. Agnes was baptised on March 5, 1733 in the parish of Barr. The marriage record states that she was from the parish of Barr and the “daughter of William Ferguson, late of Auchentoshan [Scotland].” Barr is a small village and parish about 25 kilometres east of Ayr and about the same distance south and a little east of Kilmarnock. Kilmarnock is 30 kilometres southwest of Glasgow.

William and Agnes Macnider had one child, Wilhelmina, who was born on August 24, 1754 and baptised the next day in the parish of Ayr, according to the church’s records. Wilhelmina died in infancy on November 24, 1755. Agnes died, at 21 years of age, on October 8, 1754, not long after her daughter’s birth.

Less than four months after the death of his first wife, the Church of Scotland’s parish of Kilmarnock records show that William Macnider (29) married Ann Vallance (also Vallence) (25) on Thursday, January 30, 1755. William was described again for his second marriage as a “Merchant Taylor [tailor]” from Ayr. The church’s marriage records note that Ann was a “manteau maker.” In the 17th and 18th centuries, a manteau was a topcoat,

overcoat, wrap or cloak. It appears William and Ann may have met through work.

Ann was “the daughter of Hugh Vallance, a Mason of old Cumnock.” By 1755, the Vallance family was living in Kilmarnock. Cumnock is a town in East Ayrshire, about 25 kilometres southeast of Kilmarnock.

The Church of Scotland’s parish registers for New Cumnock note that Ann was baptised on March 29, 1729, as the “daughter to Hugh Vallance and Elizabeth Baird, in Nethertown of Polquhirter.” The Polquhirter Burn (or creek), in the parish of New Cumnock, is a tributary of the River Nith. The lands of Polquhirter include Nether.

My fifth great-grandparents William Macnider and Ann Vallance raised their family in Kilmarnock. Today, Kilmarnock is a community of 46,000 people in East Ayrshire. A relatively modest settlement until the Industrial Revolution, Kilmarnock grew considerably after about 1800. The first collection of work by Scottish poet Robert Burns was published in Kilmarnock in 1786. The internationally recognized whiskey Johnnie Walker originated in Kilmarnock in the 19th century.

William and Ann Macnider had 13 children in Kilmarnock, although sadly only four children—William, John, Matthew and Margaret—lived to be adults:

- Elizabeth Macnider—baptised October 26, 1755; d. December 16, 1771
- William Macnider—my fourth great-grandfather, see below, b. Thursday, February 17, 1757, baptised on February 20, 1757 and died in July 1795 in Santo Domingo, capital of the Dominican Republic
- Thomas Macnider—b. February 19, 1759; baptised March 15, 1759; d. October 24, 1779
- John Macnider—b. June 10, 1760 (twin); buried, at 69 years, in St. Andrew’s Church, Quebec City on July 14, 1829 (see below)
- Hugh Macnider—b. June 10, 1760 (twin); d. October 18, 1777
- Matthew Macnider—b. February 2, 1762; baptised February 7, 1762; d. June 28, 1810 (see below)
- Ann Macnider—b. June 16, 1763; baptised June 23, 1763; d. September 28, 1766

- Margaret Macnider—b. August 2, 1764; baptised August 4, 1764; d. March 17, 1838 (see below)
- James Macnider—b. January 28, 1766; baptised February 2, 1766; d. in infancy December 7, 1766
- Ann Macnider—b. March 25, 1767; d. in infancy July 24, 1767
- Agnes Macnider—b. September 22, 1768; baptised September 25, 1768; d. in infancy February 16, 1770
- Ann Macnider—b. October 18, 1769; baptised December 21, 1769; d. in infancy September 29, 1770
- Susanna Macnider—b. September 11, 1771; baptised. September 12, 1771; d. in infancy June 21, 1772

Baptism dates for William and Ann Macnider's children are from the Church of Scotland's parish of Kilmarnock records. I did not locate baptism information for the twins, John and Hugh, born in 1760, or for Ann who was born in 1767.

This Macnider family experienced ongoing tragedy in losing nine of 13 children—two children died as teenagers, one daughter died at three years of age and six children died in infancy.

Emigrants from England, 1773–1776, by Gerald Fothergill (published 1964) lists a young Scot, William Macnider, 17 years of age, who left on his own from the Port of London the week of February 7–13, 1774, on the *Agnes*, for the port city of Cadiz, Spain. Macnider (b. 1757) is recorded in this publication as travelling on business to work as a clerk, perhaps initially in Cadiz.

The Dictionary of Scottish Emigrants to Canada Before Confederation, by Donald Whyte, records that three of William Macnider (1725–1772) and Ann Vallance's children arrived in Quebec City before 1788, and Ann arrived in 1797. These children were John, Matthew and Margaret. While I do not know when his siblings arrived in Quebec, William (b. 1757) married Susannah Jackson in Quebec City in 1781, and William's sister, Margaret, was married in Quebec City in 1783.

William Macnider is believed to have died in Kilmarnock about 1772, when he was 47 years old. Ann Macnider (Vallance) died in Quebec City, at age 74, on March 28, 1803. She was buried three days later in St. Andrew's Presbyterian Church Cemetery in the Upper Town of Old Quebec.

William Macnider (1757–1795) and Susannah Jackson (1765–1810)

My fourth great-grandparents William Macnider (24) and Susannah Jackson (16) of Walthamstow, Essex, northeast London, England, were married on December 24, 1781 in Quebec City. Susannah was born on January 5, 1765, and died in Quebec City on February 15, 1810, at 45 years of age. She is buried with her daughters in St. Matthew’s Cemetery, Quebec City, that was established in 1772. The cemetery was next door to St. Matthew’s Anglican Church.

Baptism records for St. Mary’s Church in Walthamstow, in northeast London, show that Susannah was christened on January 27, 1765, and her parents were William and Susannah Jackson.

British Treasury Board emigration records, acquired by Library and Archives Canada from the U.K. National Archives, show that Susannah Jackson travelled, without any other family, to Quebec City. Susannah left from the Port of London the week of March 13–20, 1775, at age 10, on the *Agnes*. The voyage would have taken about two months. This record notes that she is from Essex, and that she was “going to her aunt by her friend’s consent.” It appears that Susannah had lost her parents and either had no siblings, or they too had died or were separated from her when her parents died.

William Macnider was 38 years old when he died in Santo Domingo, capital of the Dominican Republic, in July 1795. Santo Domingo was an important North American seaport at that time. William was a merchant in the shipping and trading businesses. William and Susannah Macnider’s four children were:

- William Macnider – born on September 23, 1782 and died, at four years of age, in 1786
- Mary Evans Macnider – born on December 28, 1784 and died, at almost 25 years of age, on November 9, 1809
- Susannah Ann Macnider – born on November 10, 1785 and died, at 16 years of age, on January 8, 1802, and was buried on January 12 at the Anglican (or English) Church of Quebec
- Adam Lymburner Macnider – my third great-grandfather, born September 10, 1788 and died, at 52, in Métis, Quebec, on November 19, 1840 (Chapter 8)

William Macnider's (1757–1795) adult siblings

John Macnider (June 10, 1760–July 14, 1829). The book *Les Écossais, the Pioneer Scots of Lower Canada, 1763–1855* reports that “born in Kilmarnock, John Macnider came to Quebec as a young man. Becoming a successful merchant and founding member and vice president of the Quebec Savings Bank, he purchased the Métis seigneurie from his cousin [should say brother, Matthew] in 1807; his cousin, in turn, had acquired it five years earlier from Antoine Joubin dit Boisvert. Extending his land holdings to the west of Montreal, he [John Macnider] also acquired five stone-built stores on Rue Fabrique in Quebec City. He then built a country estate for himself at Sillery, [near his shipyards] which he named Kilmarnock, to commemorate his Scottish roots. This was where he built his ships and sent timber cargoes to Britain. To support him in his various ventures was his second wife, Angélique, daughter of Murdoch Stuart (1737–1821) of Quebec who had originated from Tain [on the northeast coast of Scotland].”



John Macnider. COURTESY OF WIKIPEDIA

The Quebec Anglican Church's records show that John, of the city of Quebec, merchant, married Angelica Stuart (1764–1829) of Sillery in the parish of St. Foy, widow (of David Ross) on June 19, 1811.

The book, *The Dictionary of Scottish Emigrants to Canada Before Confederation*, notes that Angelica's mother was Angélique (Cartier) Stuart (1746–1820), an aunt of Sir George-Étienne Cartier (1814–1873), the Canadian statesman and Father of Confederation. This publication also states that John's first wife was Catherine Ann de Vallance and that this couple had three daughters: Mary (1788–1855), Margaret (died at 88) and Charlotte.

Matthew Macnider (1762–1810). Wikipedia notes that “Mathew Macnider was a Scottish-born businessman, seigneur and political figure. Mathew Macnider was born in Ayrshire, the son of William Macnider

(1725–1772) He came to Quebec City where he established himself as a merchant. He invested in property, including the seigneuries of Bélair, Métis and Grondines. In 1792, he was elected to the 1st Parliament of Lower Canada for Hampshire.”

A letter from Quebec’s Ministry of Cultural Affairs advises that “Mathew Macnider was a member of the first Parliament and represented the county of Hampshire [today part of Portneuf County, Quebec]; he was a friend of Adam Lymburner who was defeated at his first Canadian election in the Lower Town of Quebec.”

Matthew Macnider married Mary Thompson in 1794 in Quebec, and they raised a family of as many as 10 children. Matthew died, at 48 years of age, on June 28, 1810, and was buried two days later in St. Andrew’s Church Cemetery in Quebec City, according to a church record witnessed by his nephew, Adam Lymburner Macnider.

Margaret Macnider (August 2, 1764–March 17, 1838). Margaret married two prominent men. Her first marriage was to Lieutenant-Colonel James Johnston (1724–1800), Justice of the Peace, on October 10, 1783 in Quebec City. James was 59 years of age and Margaret was 19 in 1783. This couple had two children, John Purss and Ann.



Margaret Macnider. COURTESY B. HUNTER

After James’ death, Margaret married William Holmes (d. February 24, 1834) on May 12, 1807. Wikipedia reports that this couple “had one daughter, Arabella (1808–1887), who married a cousin of her brother-in-law (Montgomery Cairnes), Sydney Robert Bellingham of Montreal and Castlebellingham, County Louth,” in northeast Ireland and that “William Holmes (1762–1834) M.D., was a Justice of the Peace of Quebec and Surgeon-General to the British Forces in Canada.”

Seigneurie Métis or Depeiras or Mitis

The Macnider family owned what became known as the Métis Seigneurie on the Gaspé Peninsula, for almost half a century, from 1802 to 1846. The seigneurie was thirty-six square miles (six miles by six miles), although by the time the last Macnider family member sold it in 1846, the dimensions had grown, without explanation, on two sides to 10 miles. To this day, Métis-sur-Mer/Métis Beach remains a predominantly English-speaking community.

Métis-sur-Mer remains beautiful and is located at the gateway to the south shore of the Gaspé Peninsula, 350 kilometres east of Quebec City and off the main highway. There are several small towns and villages within the original seigneurie including Métis-sur-Mer, Grand Métis and Petit Métis.

The Métis Seigneurie's history for European settlers dates back to May 6, 1675, when the Comte de Frontenac granted the Seigneurie Depeiras, or Mitis, to Jean-Baptiste Depeiras, a retiring member of the Sovereign Council who had been faithful and loyal to Frontenac during his entire career.

The Quebec Act of Fealty and Homage identifies the location of this property as the Seigneurie of Depeiras or Mitis. In the Malécite Native language, Mitis means "little poplars," while in Mi'kmaq, it is described as "little birch." In nearly every early statutory and legal document, including maps and charts, the place continued to be spelled as Mitis. However, in the mid-19th century, it slowly changed from identifying a location, by replacing the first I with an accented E, becoming Métis, a legally recognized group of Indigenous people in Canada. It is not clear why this change occurred.

Local historian Gilbert R. Bossé from Leggatt's Point, Quebec (near Métis-sur-Mer) stated:

With the arrival of the nineteenth century, the Seigneurie of Métis or Depeiras, slipped from French control to British control. Antoine Joubin-dit-Boisvert, and his wife Madelaine Pinguet, sold their control of and interests in the seigneurie to Matthew Macnider for £200 sterling. Prior to concluding the sale, a notice appeared a few times in the Quebec Gazette, only in the French language, requesting that anyone with an interest in the Métis Seigneurie contact M. Macnider before August 1st, 1802. As no objections seem to have appeared against the sale, Matthew Macnider signed the Act of Fealty and Homage just five weeks after acquiring title to the Seigneurie of

Depeiras or Mitis, thereby becoming Seigneur. No evidence has been found, suggesting he visited Métis; neither is there any indication, he intended to organize, and develop the seigneurie.

Sieur Paul Lambert, grandson-in-law of Elizabeth Depeiras, the daughter of Jean-Baptiste Depeiras, and original Seigneur of Métis, accepted the acquittance from the sale of the Seigneurie, from Sieur & Dame Joubin-dit-Boisvert, which occurred May 29, 1802, of £800 sterling. Marie-Anne Lambert, sister to Jacques, Jean-Baptiste and Paul Lambert, co-owners of the Seigneurie Depeiras or Mitis, with her husband Sieur Pierre Lorangé, accepted the acquittance July 5, 1802, for an additional £800. If you add up the totals, Matthew Macnider paid £1800 sterling for control of the seigneurie, approximately 36 square miles of land, including a very considerable waterfront.

Between unsound business dealings gone sour, and unanticipated attacks by con artists, Matthew Macnider found all his lands seized by a sheriff's writ of execution, in mid-May, 1805. Surprisingly, this practice was quite prevalent during the Seigneurial era, and not only in large urban areas. From my copy of the Macnider collection, we learn in Volume III that Matthew Macnider, at that time, owned not only the Mitis Seigneurie, but several hundred pieces of land, seigneuries, mills and other estates that were all seized.

In the opening case of Joseph Drapeau, representing Matthew Macnider, opposing James Shepherd, sheriff of the District of Quebec, who had seized the Seigneurie of Métis, by Writ of Execution, on behalf of Caleb Blanchard, we are left with many unanswered questions: 1) The final decision of the Kings Bench has never been located; and 2) The writ of execution, makes no mention of selling, only half of the Seigneurie.

Without getting into the gritty legal details . . . the Mitis Seigneurie continued under British ownership. The actual sheriff sale, of the Métis Seigneurie, to John Macnider in 1806, plus the Act of Avowal and Enumeration, generally signed following the Act of Fealty and Homage, hasn't been found. In 1807, John Macnider, signed another Act of Fealty and Homage, confirming title of the Seigneurie of Mitis, plus three islands or ilots composing St. Barnabé,

including his rights to hunting and fishing, and trading with the “savages,” plus numerous responsibilities related to the land.

The book, *Les Écossais, the Pioneer Scots of Lower Canada, 1763–1855* reports:

Lord Dalhousie’s assessment of the seignury [circa 1829] . . . was that “the soil appears excellent” . . . but its distance from Quebec markets and poor roads were limiting its economic development. But it had “very superior timber.” This would become the seignury’s prime asset. Having abundant quantities of hardwood and extensive pine forests, it attracted the attention of the timber baron, William Price, who joined forces with Macnider in exploiting the region’s rich forest resources. Price established large sawmills to replace Macnider’s smaller ones, and timber exports soared. Consequently, when Joseph Bouchette called in 1832, Métis had the trappings of a well settled community.

The river frontage was fully cleared and there “were some tolerably good farms.” In addition, to the manor house at Petit Métis, there were “mills and stores” together with “dwelling houses intended for the reception of travelers.” The settlers were concentrated at Grand Métis, which was about five miles to the west of Petit Métis and linked to it by a beach road that was “passable.” “Seigneurial mills” had been constructed “about one mile below Grand Métis” and Macnider had also built a schooner to provide himself with a regular shipping service to Quebec [City].

Kempt Road settlement, a principal population centre for the entire area of the Métis seignury, was one of John Macnider’s most impressive legacies. However, he never witnessed the benefits which it brought to the area, since he had died three years before its completion. So too had [his wife] Angelique. Since there were no children from their union, the Métis Seignury was transferred after their death [in 1829] to John’s nephew, Adam Lymburner Macnider [Chapter 8].

He [Adam] extended his uncle’s road building program and, as more settlers were attracted to the area, he requested the government to survey the neighbouring township. It was duly opened and named

after the Macnider family. Following Adam's death in 1840, his two sons, William and John then inherited the seigneurie. When William Macnider, a Montreal physician, died in 1846 the property then passed to the remaining heir, John, who sold it to Archibald and David Ferguson of Montreal.

Mary Aird Flavelle of Lindsay, Ontario was a granddaughter of Adam Lymburner Macnider. She wrote a brief family history which includes the following points with respect to the Seigneurie:

- By 1823, Adam Macnider had erected mills and a stone dwelling house on the Métis seigneurie. He had also built a schooner to ply to Quebec, and he owned one or two square-rig vessels. He brought immigrants from Scotland, and for those without capital, he provided financial assistance of £15—£20 for expenses, food and clothing to get started. As well, £10 was advanced for two years. For the first two years, no rent was charged. After that, a rental of 12s-6d for each lot was collected. Lots varied in size from 140 to 200 acres.
- In 1823 Adam Macnider gave this written account with respect to the Métis seigneurie:

I hold two farms in my own hands, of which I have cleared 70 acres. I have built two dwelling houses, two barns, two stables, a salt house, a cooperage, a large cookhouse for the fisheries, a corn mill and a saw mill. The labourers were paid half in money and half in goods at the rate of 3 shillings a day. The cost of clearing the land and burning was £3 an acre.

Métis-sur-Mer; a modern-day tourist brochure, notes:

- Founded by the Scot John Macnider and settled by immigrants from his native land in the early 19th century, Métis-sur-Mer attracted elegant vacationers from Montreal's English bourgeoisie, including many McGill University professors, for almost a century from 1850 to the 1950s. They arrived first by boat, and later by train.
- At its peak in the 1930s, a dozen hotels operated in this historic

summer resort colony, now officially known as Métis-sur-Mer. Today, an air of faded grandeur clings to the village. Gone are the old hotels, but the manicured cedar hedges, wild roses, and roomy villas along the shore still draw admiring gazes.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Macnider family is related to the author's family:

1. William Macnider married Margaret Cooper
2. William Macnider married Ann Vallance
3. William Macnider married Susannah Jackson
4. Adam Lymburner Macnider married Rosina Aird
5. Mary Macnider married Robert Somerville
6. Rosina Somerville married David Young
7. Walter Young married Frances Flett
8. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
9. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
10. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
11. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Adam Lymburner Macnider and Rosina Aird

My third great-grandfather Adam Macnider (Chapter 7) was the youngest of four children of William Macnider (1757–1795) and Susannah Jackson (1765–1810). Adam was their only child to reach beyond young adulthood. Adam was born in Quebec City, on September 10, 1788.

Adam Lymburner Macnider was named after a family friend, Adam Lymburner (1745–1836), who was a prominent businessman, merchant, militia officer, colonial agent, and politician. Lymburner never married, had no children and, at his request, was buried in St. George’s Church, Bloomsbury (London). Mr. Lymburner is buried alongside Alexander Auldjo, a long-time friend, according to David Roberts, manuscript editor, *Dictionary of Canadian Biography*, University of Toronto Press.

Adam moved to Montreal from Quebec City as a young man to pursue a business career. The Reverend James Somerville married Adam Macnider (24) and Rosina Aird (21) of Montreal on September 19, 1812, according to the signed marriage record of Montreal’s St. Gabriel Street Presbyterian Church.

Adam and Rosina Macnider’s marriage license was personally signed by “his Excellency Sir George Prévost, Bart. [Baronet], Captain General and Governor in Chief of the Provinces of Lower and Upper Canada.”

Rosina was the daughter of Robert Aird, a prominent merchant in Montreal. A history of the St. Gabriel Church written in 1887 notes that,



Adam Macnider circa 1825. COURTESY OF B. DAVIS

“Robert was born [circa 1750] in [or perhaps near] Kilmarnock, Scotland where he married Janet Finlay in the year 1782. Soon after their marriage, they moved to Canada and settled in Montreal. The couple had several sons and daughters. Their eldest daughter, Anna, married the Honorable George Markland of Kingston. Robert was a Montreal merchant who became business partners with Adam Macnider . . . Robert’s sons were in the baking and confectionary business on Notre Dame Street and St. Lawrence Street.”

The Dictionary of Scottish Emigrants to Canada Before Confederation by Donald Whyte notes that Robert Aird, a merchant, was from Kilmarnock, Ayr. Robert (32) returned to Montreal in 1782 after marrying Janet Finlay (18) in Kilmarnock on February 18, 1782. The Church of Scotland’s marriage record for the Airds states that Robert was a “Merchant in Quebeck [*sic*].” Before their marriage, Robert Aird had gone ahead to British North America to get established.

Janet Finlay was very likely baptised on May 31, 1764 in Irvine, Ayrshire. Her *Montreal Gazette* obituary notes that she died, at about 75 years of age, in Montreal on September 28, 1837. The obituary states that: “She was long at the head of one of our most useful charities, while her private benevolence was most liberal and judicious.”

Robert and Janet Aird’s nine children were: John (1784–1823), Martha (b. August 25, 1786), Anna (b. March 1788), Rosina (b. March 23, 1791), Janet (b. July 18, 1793), William (b. June 9, 1795), Robert (November 5, 1799–October 3, 1867), James (b. October 5, 1803) and Finlay (October 8, 1806–June 10, 1833).

St. Gabriel Church’s burial records state that Robert Aird died, at age 56, on September 25, 1806. This church was regularly attended by Robert and Janet Aird, Adam and Rosina Macnider, Dr. William Macnider and several other members of both families. After Robert died, his responsibilities within the church were carried out by his wife and by his eldest son, John. Robert Aird owned pews #43 and 44.

Adam and Rosina Macnider had 10 children; very likely all were born in Montreal:

- William Macnider—born on June 30, 1814. William was a highly respected medical doctor in Montreal. William married Miss Wisheart in Scotland, and the couple had one child who died in infancy. William died, at 31, on March 17, 1846.
- Janet Aird Macnider—born on July 25, 1816; married John Speirs; died on July 9, 1854.
- Anna Markland Macnider—born on April 15, 1818; married Francis Walker Shiriff, MD (born Athelstaneford, Scotland, March 9, 1811) on October 9, 1838. He died in Huntingdon, Quebec, on November 20, 1893; Anna died in Huntingdon on August 19, 1903.
- Susannah Ann Macnider—born on May 21, 1820.
- John Macnider—born on July 29, 1822; first married Jane Abigail Johnston (b. 1826) on May 20, 1845; married second Helen Frances Southworth Larrabee Carr (died at 78). John died in 1882.
- Mary Susannah Macnider, my great-great-grandmother—born on May 8, 1824 and married Robert Somerville (Chapter 9).

- Adam Lymburner Macnider—born on June 20, 1826 and died in infancy on October 28, 1827.
- George Markland Macnider—born on March 22, 1828; married Helen Hunter (1832–1898); died in 1898.
- Rosina Arabella Macnider—born on May 10, 1830.
- Adam Robert Macnider—born on February 17, 1832; married Eliza Falconer (1840–1927); and died on December 7, 1915.

Rosina was born in Montreal, on March 23, 1791, and died two days short of her 41st birthday. She was thrown from her carriage when the horses took fright going down St. Lawrence Street hill in Montreal. She died from her injuries not long after the accident, on March 21, 1832, and was buried five days later, according to St. Gabriel Church records.

At the time of her death, Rosina had eight children under 18 years of



Rosina Macnider circa 1825. COURTESY OF J. DAVIS

age. While I do not know who accepted responsibility for the other young children when Rosina died, her immediate older sister, Anna Aird, took Mary when she was seven years old to live with her in Toronto. Anna Aird was married to George Herchmer Markland (1790–1862).

Wikipedia notes that by 1836, George Markland was considered one of the leading figures in the Family Compact, the ruling clique of Upper Canada's elite. In 1838, rumours began to circulate regarding improper conduct by Markland; he was alleged to have had liaisons with several young men. The investigation was dropped after Markland agreed to resign as Inspector General. In 1841, there were additional allegations of misappropriation of funds, because Markland had used funds from King's College (now University of Toronto) in support of the construction of Upper Canada College; this issue was dropped after Bishop John Strachan of Toronto intervened.

The Scotch Presbyterian Church's 1887 history reports that:

Adam L. Macnider's connection with the St. Gabriel Street Church appears to have begun in 1812. In that year, his first subscription is acknowledged He was in partnership with his brother-in-law, John Aird, as an auctioneer. He also represented the Quebec Fire Insurance Company at his office, 50 St. Paul Street. He was one of the original members of the corporation of the General Hospital in 1821. He was a director of the Savings Bank in 1819 and of the Bank of Canada in 1820. He was a member of the temporal committee of the Church in 1816 and 1817, and treasurer in 1818 and again in 1830, 1831 and 1832. He was President in 1824 and Vice President in 1825. . . . [H]e was appointed by the court [1831] to the committee of the congregation to receive the opened church from those who had closed it and kept it closed for twelve months.

Mr. Macnider was born in Quebec City, 10th September 1778 [should be 1788] and he was married to Rosina Aird 12th [should be 19th] September 1812 by Rev. James Somerville. He died at Métis [Quebec] on 24th November 1840 and his remains were brought to Montreal by his son John and laid in the family vault at Outremont.

One of his [Adam's] sons was the late Dr. William Macnider who took a somewhat prominent part in church matters in after years. It was Dr. Macnider who founded the University Lying-in

Hospital. He acted as secretary at the annual meeting in 1844, and was chosen a member of the temporal committee that year He died [at 31] 17th March 1846. He married an Edinburgh lady, who returned after his decease to her native city, where she still resides and takes a deep interest, not in the St. Gabriel Street Church alone but in every good work affecting Canada. She has for many years had an organized committee at work in Edinburgh, raising funds for the work of French Evangelization.

The *Dictionary of Canadian Biography Online* provides the following documentary about Adam Macnider that was researched and authored by Carman Miller, Associate Professor of History at McGill University in Montreal:

Born into a merchant family of Quebec, Adam Lymburner Macnider was named after a prominent businessman, Adam Lymburner. The boy's uncles John and Mathew Macnider were Quebec merchants, and his aunt Margaret Macnider was married first to James Johnston, yet another Quebec merchant. Macnider began business in Montreal some time before 1810, probably as a representative of the family's commercial interests; in September 1811 he was operating under his own name as an auctioneer and broker.

By May 1812 he had entered into a partnership with an old family friend, Samuel Southby Bridge, as Macnider and Bridge, commission merchants and auctioneers. This partnership was dissolved early in 1814. Shortly thereafter Macnider formed a similar association, with his brother-in-law, John Aird, that traded in property, liquor, dry goods, and groceries. Macnider also established a partnership with James Scott; they did a large mercantile trade on commission, which in 1824 included 2,000 volumes of "scarce and valuable books."

By 1825 Macnider was operating under three names: A. L. Macnider and Company, Macnider, Aird and Company, and Macnider and Scott, and was probably among the city's most important commission merchants and auctioneers. He owned two vessels, the brig *Hibernia* and the schooner *Concordia*, and during the 1825 shipping season he and Scott were the largest importers

in Montreal, receiving 26 separate consignments. They imported textiles, haberdashery, earthenware, coal, and steel from Liverpool, London, Belfast, Greenock (Scotland), and Leith and exported wood, wheat, and potash.

Although large, the firm of Macnider and Scott was unable to withstand the trade crisis of 1825–26. In the latter year Macnider's house and store were auctioned by the sheriff for the substantial sum of £3,850. The following year the company declared bankruptcy, unable to meet debts totaling £34,617, of which £22,547 was due to firms in Britain. Macnider and Scott held credits to the amount of £27,931, but some £13,764 was considered bad or doubtful. In addition the company had lost £3,225 on a shipment of wheat, £2,500 on a consignment of potash, and, largely as a result of the failure of Maitland, Garden, and Auldjo, £3,000 on bills of exchange.

Macnider, however, was not broken. By August 1828 he was again in business under his own name, selling on consignment or by auction everything from coal bricks to Dutch dolls. In fact, he seems to have made a remarkable recovery, and during another crisis, in 1836, he was a major creditor; that year he inherited £500 from the estate of Adam Lymburner.

Macnider's business interests were not confined to the wholesale trade. In 1819 he was a director of the Montreal Savings Bank and the Montreal agent for the Quebec Fire Assurance Company. He was an incorporator of the Bank of Canada in 1822 and later became a director. A member of the Scotch Presbyterian Church (later known as St Gabriel Street Church), he served on the congregation's temporal committee in 1816–17, and was its president in 1824 and its vice-president in 1825.

In 1817 he joined a special committee to raise financial support for the Reverend Henry Esson, the learned young clergyman who had recently been selected for the charge, and the following year he was the congregation's treasurer. Later he would support the Esson side in an unseemly dispute with a faction backing the Reverend Edward Black over the incumbency and over possession of the church. In 1820 he was commissioned an ensign in Montreal's 1st Militia Battalion, which grouped many leading British businessmen. By

1828 he had been promoted captain, and during the rebellions of 1837–38 he served with that rank in the 3rd battalion of Montreal Loyal Volunteers.

In 1821 he helped establish the Montreal General Hospital on Rue Dorchester and in 1828 he became one of its governors. He was appointed a warden of Trinity House in 1822, and from 1824 to 1827 he served as a grand juror. He subsequently received a number of other appointments: justice of the peace in 1830, commissioner on the Montreal Board of Health during the cholera epidemic of 1832, presiding officer in the faubourg Saint-Antoine for the election of town councilors in 1833, and deputy master of Trinity House in 1834.

Historian Carman Miller reported that Adam Macnider's "business career, marked by its family ties as well as by its diversity, adversity, and recovery and his participation in the civil and religious life of his community were typical of a man of his class and time."

Mary Aird Flavelle of Lindsay, Ontario, a granddaughter of Adam Lyburner Macnider, wrote a brief family history, which includes the following points:

- At a young age, Adam Macnider went to Montreal and entered the business of Robert Aird [d. 1806], a general merchant on St. Paul Street. [Adam married Robert's daughter in 1812]. Robert Aird and Macnider then joined a Mr. Whyte, and the firm became known as Aird, Macnider & Whyte, general merchants and auctioneers. [Note: Present day publications record that by 1820, the firm was Macnider, Aird & Whyte. The Aird in this firm was Adam's brother-in-law, John Aird.]
- In 1900, the *Montreal Star* published an edition of the newspaper from 1816 which gave the names of the largest firms then doing business in Montreal. Aird, Macnider & Whyte was one of these large firms, with a capital of £25,000.
- Adam Macnider also opened an office to work as a representative of The Quebec Fire Insurance Co., the first of its kind in Montreal. Adam was one of the original members of Corporation of the General

Hospital in 1821. He served as a director of the Montreal Savings Bank when it opened in 1819 and also the Bank of Canada in 1821. [Note: The Montreal Savings Bank was closely allied with the Bank of Montreal, sharing the same quarters and often the same officers. In 1856, it was absorbed by the Bank of Montreal and became the bank's savings department.]

The following comments are provided by Ms. Flavelle on some of Adam and Rosina Macnider's children:

- William Macnider studied to obtain his medical degree in Edinburgh and married Miss Wisthart there. He returned to practice in Montreal for several years. He was one of the doctors instrumental in founding, in 1843, The University Lying-In Hospital. This hospital became known as the Montreal Maturity Hospital in 1887 and joined with the Royal Victoria Hospital, which is affiliated with McGill University, in 1926. William and his wife had no children. After his death on March 17, 1846, his wife returned to Scotland.
- John Macnider moved to the United States. He married Jennie Johnston.
- George Macnider had three daughters and a son. He was described as a "gentleman of leisure" by the author of this family history and she was not aware of his occupation.
- Robert Macnider moved to California and married there. The couple had two daughters. He was an officer during the Civil War and lived with his daughter in Salem, Oregon until his death.
- Anna Markland Macnider married Dr. Shirriff of Huntingdon, Quebec.
- Jessie (Janet Aird) Macnider married John Speirs, a Montreal merchant.
- Rosabella (apparently a combination of her official name, Rosina Arabella) Macnider married George Walker.
- Mary Macnider (1824–1877) was my great-great-grandmother. She married Robert Somerville of Huntingdon and Athelstan, Quebec (Chapter 9).

In June 1839, when Adam Macnider was 50, he was named a commissioner for the repair of the Métis or Mitis road. By then, he was living on the seigneurie of Métis that he had inherited from his uncle, John Macnider (Chapter 7).

Adam Lymburner Macnider died on November 19, 1840, at age 52, in the old manor house at Petit-Métis, on the Métis Seigneurie on the Gaspé Peninsula, and was buried in the St. Gabriel Street Presbyterian Church Cemetery in Montreal on December 2, 1840.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. Adam Macnider married Rosina Aird
2. Mary Macnider married Robert Somerville
3. Rosina Somerville married David Young
4. Walter Young married Frances Flett
5. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
6. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
7. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
8. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Brown and Somerville Families

My fourth great-grandfather Robert Brown was a highly regarded Scottish agriculturist. He married Jane Dudgeon. Before I introduce Robert Brown and his family, I will provide information about Robert Brown's and Jane Dudgeon's parents and Jane's grandparents, the Jonkisons.

John Broun and Margaret Cunningham

Robert Brown's parents and my fifth great-grandparents were John Broun and Margaret Cunningham, who married in the parish of Prestonkirk in East Lothian on May 17, 1755, according to the Church of Scotland's records. This marriage record notes that John and Margaret were from the parishes of Prestonkirk and Whitekirk, respectively. Whitekirk is about five kilometres north of Prestonkirk.

John Broun was baptised on August 29, 1725, in the parish of Prestonkirk. Church records document that John's parents and my sixth great-grandparents were George Broun and Jean Dason.

Margaret Cunningham was baptised on April 3, 1726, in the parish of Prestonpans. Margaret's parents and my sixth great-grandparents are recorded as George Cunningham and Elizabeth Hepburn in church records.

East Lothian County is about 30 kilometres east of Edinburgh and is officially the sunniest area of Scotland. The most dramatic part of the region is roughly 60 kilometres of coastline, with golden beaches, spectacular cliffs and

some of the world's finest links golf courses. East Lothian has many picturesque villages that vary from the traditional seaside communities to the town of Haddington. Haddington is the administrative, cultural and geographical centre of East Lothian. Agriculture has long been the basis for Haddington's prosperity, and today, Haddington has a population of nearly 9,000.

The Church of Scotland's baptism records for Prestonkirk show that John and Margaret Brown had seven boys and one girl, with one child (Charles) apparently dying at a young age:

- Robert Brown—my fourth great-grandfather, September 2, 1756
- Janet Brown—November 15, 1757
- Alexander Brown—November 27, 1758
- John Brown—November 27, 1759
- George Brown—March 24, 1761
- Charles Brown—July 14, 1763
- James Brown—December 18, 1764
- Charles Brown—July 16, 1766

Peter Dudgeon (1714–1785) and Beatrix Jonkison (b. 1723)

Jane Dudgeon's parents and my fifth great-grandparents were Peter Dudgeon (baptised June 20, 1714–October 10, 1785) and Beatrix (also Beatrice) Jonkison (baptised September 18, 1723) who married on November 5, 1751 in the parish of Athelstaneford, according to the Church of Scotland's records. Peter's official name was Patrick. Athelstaneford is 30 kilometres east of Edinburgh.

Church registers document that Peter and Beatrix Dudgeon had the following children baptised in the parish of Athelstaneford:

- Katherine Dudgeon—November 28, 1752
- Margaret Dudgeon—January 15, 1754
- James Dudgeon—March 9, 1755
- John Dudgeon—October 25, 1756
- Mary Dudgeon—March 29, 1758
- Jean (Jane) Dudgeon—my fourth great-grandmother, July 24, 1759
- Alexander Dudgeon—November 22, 1761

- John Dudgeon—April 11, 1763
- Beatrix Dudgeon—March 17, 1766
- Euphams Dudgeon—(girl) born December 27, 1766; baptised January 7, 1767

The Commissariat Record of Edinburgh documents that Patrick Dudgeon was buried in Drem, Midlothian on October 10, 1785, and that he had been a farmer. Drem is five kilometres northwest of Athelstaneford.

Peter's June 20, 1714 baptism record for the parish of Athelstaneford in East Lothian shows that his parents were James Dudgeon and Margaret Sherriff (also Shirroff). James Dudgeon was baptised on August 7, 1675 in Prestonkirk, East Lothian and died on April 5, 1734 in Drem. The baptism record shows that James' father was William Dudgeon, my seventh great-grandfather.

Margaret Sherriff was born on August 29 and baptised on September 1, 1683 in the parish of Haddington, East Lothian, according to church records. Margaret Sherriff's parents are listed on the baptism record as Patrick Sherriff and Margaret Sinclair, my seventh great-grandparents.

John Jonkison (b. circa 1690) and Kathren Cunninghame

Beatrix Jonkison's father was John Jonkison, my sixth great-grandfather. He served at one time as the minister for the church in which Robert Brown and Jane Dudgeon married. John Jonkison was born about 1690 in the parish of Peebles. Peebles is about 30 kilometres south of Edinburgh. John married Kathren Cunninghame on January 27, 1714, according to Athelstaneford's church records.

The Church of Scotland's baptism records for the parish of Athelstaneford show that John and Kathren Jonkison's children were:

- Mary Jonkison—October 21, 1714
- Alexander Jonkison—February 10, 1716
- James Jonkison—March 13, 1718
- Francis Jonkison—November 8, 1720
- Beatrix Jonkison (my fifth great-grandmother)—September 18, 1723
- James Jonkison—June 25, 1725
- Francis Jonkison—October 9, 1726

Because two of the Jonkison's children's names (James and Francis) were reused, I assume the first child died early. In addition, there was a baptism on April 21, 1730 for an unnamed child who died.

Robert Brown (1756–1831) and Jane Dudgeon (1759–1828)

The Church of Scotland's records for East Lothian County state that my fourth great-grandparents Robert Brown (23) and Jane Dudgeon (19) were married on May 26, 1780 in the parish of Athelstaneford.

These church records also show that Robert Brown was born in the parish of Prestonkirk in East Lothian County on August 27 and baptised on September 2, 1756. Jane Dudgeon was born on July 10 and baptised on July 24, 1759. Her official name was Jean, but based on published information about her, she was known as Jane.

Wikipedia reports that:

Robert Brown was a Scottish writer on agricultural science and rural subjects. He was born in East Linton, Haddington, entered into business in his native village, but soon turned to agriculture, which he carried on first at West Fortune and afterwards at Markle, where he practiced several important experiments. He was an intimate friend of George Rennie of Phantassie. While Rennie applied himself to the practice of agriculture, Brown wrote on the science. He published *A View of the Agriculture of the West Riding of Yorkshire*, 8vo, 1799, and *A Treatise on Rural Affairs*, 2 vols, 8vo, 1811, and wrote many articles in the *Edinburgh Farmer's Magazine*, of which he was editor for fifteen years. Some of these articles have been translated into French and German. He died at Drylaw, East Lothian, on 14 Feb. 1831, in his seventy-fourth year.

The *Edinburgh Evening Courant* of February 19, 1831 contains the following notice, in part, of the death of Robert Brown:

We regret to announce the death of Mr. Robert Brown, late farmer in Markle, and well known to the world as author of *A Treatise on Rural Affairs* [more than 400 pages long]. He died at Drylawhill, East Lothian, on the 14th inst., after a few hours' illness, at an advanced

period of life. Mr. Brown was born in the village of East Linton, and in youth was intended for a different profession, but the bent of his genius soon led him to agricultural pursuits, which he long followed with singular success. He was a contemporary and intimate acquaintance of the late George Rennie, Esq. of Phantassie, and to both individuals modern agriculture is greatly indebted. While Mr. Brown followed close on Mr. Rennie in the field, the energies of his mind were directed more particularly to the literary department of agriculture, and his Treatise on Rural Affairs contains imperishable evidence of the admirable system followed by the two friends, and of the vigour of the writer's mind.

Mr. Rennie's operations had to be viewed personally before they could be appreciated, and they in a great measure perished with himself. His sphere of usefulness was thus necessarily limited, although the great post-road to London, passing through Phantassie, afforded thousands an opportunity of being instructed. Mr. Brown's labours were widely disseminated through the instrumentality of the press, and generations yet unborn may, in the uttermost parts of the earth, derive instruction from his luminous pages. Thus Mr. Rennie in the field and Mr. Brown in the closet, by this division of labour (if we may so express ourselves), accomplished much for agriculture, and it is chiefly to their exertions that the husbandry of Scotland owes its fame and perfection.

Mr. Brown shone not merely as a writer or practical agriculturist, but as conductor of the *Edinburgh Farmers' Magazine* for fourteen or fifteen years. From the time of its commencement he discussed freely in its pages almost every subject of public interest, and was perhaps fonder of Scottish law and politics than even rural affairs. Mr. Brown was endowed with a most retentive memory and a truly energetic mind, and up to the day of his death he felt a warm interest in the welfare of the public. Within these few days he wrote in the newspapers in favour of investing the tenantry with the elective franchise, and against the present law of hypothec.

The Church of Scotland's baptism register documents that Robert and Jane Brown had 13 children:

- Margaret Brown—born August 4 and baptised August 10, 1781 (my third great-grandmother, see below)
- Beatrix Brown—November 18, 1782
- Katharine Brown—May 10, 1784
- John Brown—November 1, 1785
- Janet Brown—March 7, 1787
- Patrick Brown—April 4, 1788
- Jean Brown—March 3, 1789
- Alexander Brown—October 14, 1791
- Isabella Brown—December 31, 1792
- James Brown—May 1, 1794
- George Brown—May 13, 1795
- Charles Brown—March 4, 1797
- Robert Brown—November 27, 1800

The oldest two Brown children, Margaret and Beatrix, were born in the parish of Athelstaneford, where their parents married and initially lived. All the other Brown children were born in the parish of Prestonkirk after the family moved there. The town of Linton in the parish of Prestonkirk is eight kilometres east of Athelstaneford.

A great-great-granddaughter of Robert Brown has provided information on some of Robert and Jane Brown's children in an undated, handwritten paper stating:

Margaret Brown was a daughter of Robert Brown of Markle, East Lothian. She had five brothers, two of whom were farmers, Charles and Alexander. George lived on the money bequeathed to him by his father. John was a lieutenant in the Army and James, a major who was at one time stationed with his regiment at Kingston, Canada [Margaret] also had a sister, Isabella who married the Rev. William Ritchie of the parish of Athelstaneford.

Robert Brown is buried in the churchyard of Prestonkirk Church, Linton. Tombstone #E176 has the following inscription:

To the memory of Robert Brown, Esq., late farmer at Markle.

Distinguished by superior talents, which he diligently cultivated; possessed of extensive knowledge, which he brought to bear with happy effect on the various subjects of which he treated; he engaged chiefly in rural affairs, and rose to eminence not less by his numerous and useful writings on husbandry, than by his skill and success as a practical agriculturist. An affectionate husband, a kind father, an exemplary Christian, he was always forward to assist those less successful than himself. He died 14th February 1831, aged 74. Also, in grateful remembrance of Jane Dudgeon, his beloved spouse, who died 27th September 1828, aged 69.

John Somerville (b. circa 1725) and Janet Lithgow (b. 1729)

My fourth great-grandparents John Somerville of the parish of Channelkirk and Janet Lithgow of the parish of Lauder were married, “after giving to the Poor” on December 22, 1763, according to the Church of Scotland’s records. John Somerville (Somervail) was born to James Somervail and his wife around 1725 in the parish of Channelkirk, Berwick County, according to parish records.

Jane Lithgow was baptised in the parish of Greenlaw on April 13, 1729, according to church records. She was baptised Jane but used the name Janet. Her parents were John Lithgow of the parish of Lauder and Margaret Lunham of the parish of Greenlaw. Greenlaw parish is in central Berwickshire.

Berwickshire or Berwick County is 75 kilometres southeast of Edinburgh. The county borders East Lothian and Midlothian to the north with the North Sea to the east.

The Church of Scotland’s records show that John and Janet Somerville’s six children were baptised in the parish of Channelkirk in Berwick County as follows:

- James Somerville—January 26, 1766
- Andrew Somerville—December 10, 1767 (my third great-grandfather, see below)
- Archibald Somerville—October 13, 1769
- Betty Somerville—May 31, 1771
- Alexander Somerville—March 25, 1774

- Euphans Somerville (girl)—born November 5 and baptised November 9, 1776

Anne Trites, a Somerville descendant, has advised that Janet Lithgow was the niece of R. Alexander Smith, minister of Lauder, through whom the Evelaw farm (see below) in Berwickshire came to the Somerville family.

Andrew Somerville (1767–1852) and Margaret Brown (1781–1845)

My third great-grandparents Andrew Somerville and Margaret Brown, eldest daughter of Robert Brown of Markle in East Lothian, married on February 18, 1805 in Athelstaneford, East Lothian. Andrew Somerville was born on November 30 and baptised on December 10, 1767 in Channelkirk, Berwick. Margaret Brown was born on August 4, 1781.

Andrew Somerville owned extensive farms in East Lothian County and Berwickshire. He has been described by one of his descendants as a wealthy man who inherited three farms and had 100-year leases on two other farms. Diaries maintained by Andrew's youngest son, Andrew (b. 1823), indicate that Andrew, Sr., owned and operated a ship, the *Catherine*, for at least five years, which travelled between the Caribbean, New York, Newfoundland and Scotland.

A great-granddaughter of Andrew Somerville has provided the following information on Andrew:

He rented at one and the same time the farms of Athelstaneford and New Maines in East Lothian and Hill house of Hazeldeau, Berwickshire which he succeeded to on the death of his brother. He also farmed his own property, Evelaw, which descended to him by inheritance.

At the time of the 1841 census, Andrew and Margaret Somerville and three daughters were living at Luffness Mill, East Lothian.

Athelstaneford, Markle and East Lothian are about 30 kilometres east of Edinburgh.

Andrew died, at age 84, on August 12, 1852 in Scotland, buried in Athelstaneford, near Haddington. Somerville's impressive monument in the Athelstaneford churchyard reads: "In memory of Andrew Somerville Esq. of

Evelaw who died on the 12th of August 1852 aged 84 years and of Margaret Brown, his wife, who died on the 8th of May 1845 aged 63 years.”

The Church of Scotland’s baptism records show Andrew and Margaret Somerville had 13 children over a period of 17 years, all baptised in the parish of Athelstaneford:

- Jean Somerville—January 11, 1806
- Janet Somerville—January 20, 1807
- John Somerville—April 23, 1808
- Beatrix Somerville—July 22, 1809
- Elisabeth Somerville—July 30, 1811
- Robert Brown Somerville—November 22, 1812 (my great-great-grandfather, see below)
- Margaret Somerville—April 9, 1814
- Isabella Somerville—September 30, 1815 (died young)
- Euphemia Somerville—March 7, 1817
- Isabella Somerville—October 10, 1818
- Catherine Somerville—February 18, 1820
- Jemima Archibald Somerville—February 1, 1822
- Andrew Somerville—March 13, 1823

Beatrice, Isabella, Margaret and Catherine never married and lived together in Edinburgh at 31 Saxe Coburg Place, about two kilometres north of Edinburgh Castle.

Robert Brown Somerville (1812–1904) and Mary Susannah Macnider (1824–1877)

Robert Somerville was born in Athelstaneford, Maines in the parish of Athelstaneford, County of East Lothian on November 22 and baptised on December 21, 1812. Robert “was taught at home by a governess until he and his brother John were sent to a parish school and when he was twelve they were sent to the Haddington Grammar School, a boarding school in Haddington,” as documented in a handwritten paper by a granddaughter of Robert Somerville.

Robert immigrated, at age 21, to Lower Canada in 1833 on the ship *Science*, and landed in New York. He settled in Athelstan, which is about six

kilometres south of Huntingdon, Lower Canada. Huntingdon is about 75 kilometres southwest of Montreal, near the U.S. and Ontario borders.

He married Mary Susannah Macnider (Chapter 8), the fourth daughter of Adam L. Macnider of Montreal, when she was 16 years old, in Montreal, on August 22, 1840. The marriage took place at St. Gabriel Street Presbyterian Church in Montreal. Mary Macnider was born in Montreal, on May 8, 1824, and died, at age 53, on August 22, 1877 at Harriston, Ontario, now part of the town of Minto, in Wellington County, roughly 120 kilometres west of Toronto.

In her death record, the doctor stated that Mary Somerville died from meningitis complications. She is buried in Toronto's Mount Pleasant Cemetery.



Robert Somerville in 1882, at 70.

Wikipedia reports that:

Robert Brown Somerville (1812–1904) was a Scottish-born merchant and political figure in Quebec. He represented Huntingdon in the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Canada from 1854 to 1866. He was born in Athelstaneford, son of Andrew Somerville, a landowner in East Lothian, and was educated in Haddington. Somerville came to Lower Canada in 1833 and settled at Athelstan, where he operated mills and a tannery. He was a school commissioner, justice of the peace and commissioner for the Trial of Small Causes. He commanded a volunteer unit during the Lower Canada Rebellion and reached the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the local militia. He was mayor of Huntingdon and served on the councils for Hinchinbrook and Godmanchester counties. In 1840, he married Mary Susannah Macnider. Somerville supported Confederation.

Mary Aird Flavelle of Lindsay, Ontario, a granddaughter of Adam Lymburner Macnider (Robert Somerville's father-in-law), wrote a brief family history that includes the following points regarding Robert and Mary Somerville:

- Robert Somerville was a merchant and had a tannery in Athelstan, a town named after his old home near Edinburgh.
- He came to Canada in 1833 not intending to stay. His father had sent him out to look after an older brother, John, who was considered “wild.” Their father was a wealthy man, a gentleman farmer who had inherited three farms and 100-year leases on two others.
- Robert Somerville was a Member of Parliament for three terms during Sir John A. MacDonald's reign. He was never defeated. He voted for Confederation but gave up his seat to Sir John Rose before the bill was really carried. [A great-grandson of Somerville wrote that when the question of representation by population came up for vote, Robert Somerville was the only MP from Lower Canada to vote for the motion.]
- Robert Somerville was also a lieutenant-colonel in the militia. During the Fenian raids, Somerville helped chase them back over the border. [Wikipedia—The Fenian raids of the Fenian Brotherhood

[based in the United States] on British army forts, customs posts and other targets in Canada were fought in order to bring pressure on Britain to withdraw from Ireland, between 1866 and 1871.]

- When Mary chose to wed Robert Somerville at 16 years of age, her aunt Anna Markland disapproved because she thought Mary was too young to marry. Her wealthy aunt left her out of her will. [Note: Mary's aunt raised her after Mary's mother died when Mary was seven years old. Despite her aunt's disapproval, Mary named her first child after her aunt.]

The *Canadian Parliamentary Companion of 1864* includes the following information about Robert Somerville:

- Was a large mill-owner and tanner
- The second son of Andrew Somerville of Evelair, Berwickshire, Scotland who was an extensive farmer in East Lothian
- On his mother's side, he was a grandson of Robert Brown of Markle, a celebrated agriculturist and author of several works on agriculture.
- Educated at the parish school and the Haddington Grammar School
- Was mayor of the Village of Huntingdon, municipal councilor of Hunchinbrooke and Godmanchester, school commissioner and commissioner for Summary Trial of Small Causes
- Commanded a company of the Loyal Huntingdon Volunteers in the Rebellion of 1837–38 and was lieutenant-colonel commanding the 5th Battalion Beauharnois Militia.
- First returned to Parliament for Huntingdon at general election in 1854 (and held that seat from then to at least 1864). Re-elected by acclamation in the general election of 1861—Population 17,491—Number of voters 2,658: vote R.B. Somerville—891 and T.K. Ramsay – 696
- Parliamentary records were apparently not published for 1864 to 1872, but Robert Somerville was also a member of the Legislative Assembly in 1867, when Canada began as an independent country, according to the *Canadian Almanac*, 1867.

Robert and Mary Somerville had 10 children, eight of whom were born in Huntingdon, Canada East (Quebec). The two children born outside of Huntingdon are noted in the following summary:

- Anna Markland Somerville—b. February 15, 1842; married Philip Moore of Moore Station, Canada East (about a thirty minute drive east of downtown Montreal); the couple had no children; d. 1911
- Andrew John Somerville—b. February 25, 1844; married Amanda Fitch on June 6, 1872 in Toronto; six children; he owned a manufacturing business in Toronto and became a wealthy man; d. 1914
- Margaret Brown Somerville—b. September 7, 1845; killed by lightning, at age 12, in Athelstone, Canada East, on September 25, 1857
- Rosina Arabella Somerville, my great-grandmother—b. December 27, 1847; married Dr. David Young of Selkirk, Manitoba; died Winnipeg, December 16, 1917 (Chapter 11)
- Jane Walker Somerville—b. August 22, 1850; married John Dewar of Milton, Ontario, on October 28, 1875; he was a county Crown Attorney and Deputy Judge; seven children; Jane died in 1945
- William Francis Somerville—b. June 2, 1852; never married; died in 1935
- Mary Elizabeth Somerville—b. February 26, 1854; married June 1, 1876 to Robert Harvey of Harrison and Guelph, Ontario; five children; she died in 1941
- Helen Shirriff Somerville—b. March 10, 1856; married Arthur W. Pearl of Burlington, Ontario, on October 21, 1885; five children; she died in 1938
- Jessie Beatrice Victoria Somerville—b. Athelstan, Canada East, April 30, 1857; married in 1883 to William T. Shannon, a banker in Picton, Ontario; four children; she died in 1902
- Catherine Somerville—b. December 6, 1859; married William Reid Young (Chapter 10) at Hawthorne Lodge (Selkirk), Manitoba, on December 29, 1880; two children – Helen Somerville (May 25,

1882–1964) and William Robert (May 28, 1885–1916). William was Dr. David Young's brother (Chapter 11); Catherine died in 1917.

Robert Somerville maintained his residence in Canada East, while he continued as a Member of Parliament for Huntington. At the time of the 1861 census for the village of Huntington, Robert, Mary and their nine children (ages 2–19) were listed as living in a one-and-a-half-storey stone house. Sometime after 1864, when he was no longer Member of Parliament, the Somerville family relocated to Ontario.

By the time of the 1871 census for Lambton County, Ontario, Robert (58) and Mary (46) Somerville and seven of their children, ranging in age from 11 to 24 years old, were living in the town of Sarnia. Robert was working as "Collector for Inland Revenue." Sarnia is 300 kilometres southwest of Toronto, across the St. Clair River from the state of Michigan.



Mary Somerville (Macnider) circa 1870 at 46.

Robert Somerville died suddenly, at 91 years of age, on August 19, 1904. He was living at 63 Yorkville Avenue in Toronto, with his daughter, at the time of his death. Robert is buried alongside his wife in Toronto's Mount Pleasant Cemetery at the Somerville family monument.

An obituary that appeared in a 1904 Manitoba newspaper on the death of Robert Somerville reads:

Word reached here this week of the death in Toronto on Friday last of Mr. Robert Brown Somerville, father of Mrs. David Young [Chapter 11] and Mrs. W. R. Young, of Selkirk. On Thursday evening about six o'clock [the] deceased, who was 92 [*sic*] years of age, was seated comfortably in his chair smoking prior to dinner when, without warning, he suffered a paralytic stroke from which he never regained consciousness. He is said to have never known a day's illness in his life, and he had not complained of feeling unwell recently.

[The] deceased was born at Athelstaneford, Mains, Scotland on November 22, 1812, and came to Canada in 1833. He settled in Huntingdon, Que., and at once took a prominent place in the community. In 1837 he became captain of the Royal Huntingdon Volunteers, rising to colonel in 1856. He held the office of mayor, and represented the county in the parliament sitting at Quebec and Toronto from 1854 to 1867. He retired from business a quarter of a century ago, and went to Toronto, where he had since resided. He leaves two sons and six daughters, his wife predeceasing him twenty years ago.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Brown and Somerville families are related
to the author's family:

1. John Jonkison married Kathren Cunninghame
2. Beatrix Jonkison married Peter Dudgeon
3. Jane Dudgeon married Robert Brown (Note)
4. Margaret Brown married Andrew Somerville (Note)
5. Robert Brown Somerville married Mary Macnider
6. Rosina Somerville married David Young
7. Walter Young married Frances Flett
8. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
9. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
10. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
11. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Note—Robert Brown's parents were John Broun and Margaret Cunningham.

John Broun's parents were George Broun and Jean Dason

Andrew Somerville's parents were John Somerville and Janet Lithgow.

John Somerville's father was James Somervail.

Janet Lithgow's parents were John Lithgow and Margaret Lunham.

Young Family

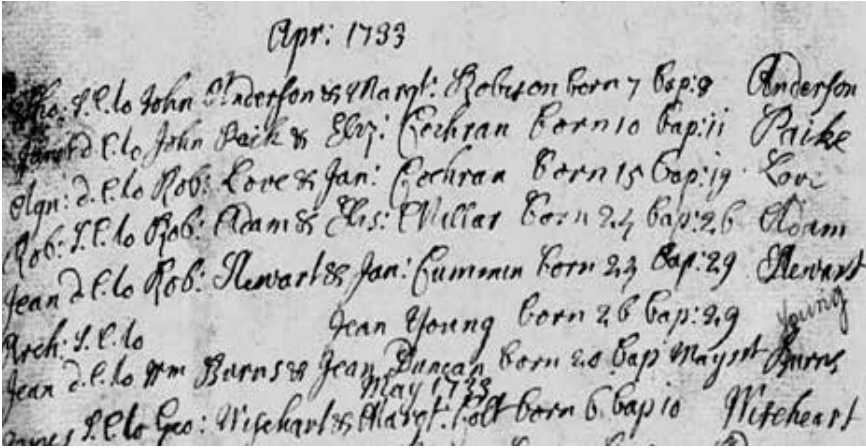
Jean Young (born circa 1700)

Jean Young was my fifth great-grandmother. She lived in Paisley, Renfrewshire, Scotland. Paisley is a small community about 20 kilometres west of central Glasgow. In the 18th century, Paisley was best known as a community of weavers. From everything I have been able to find, as discussed below, the person who is likely to have been Jean's husband, and my fifth great-grandfather, was Archibald Young. Jean's maiden name was Young.

The April 1733 Church of Scotland's Paisley Abbey baptism record for my fourth great-grandfather Archibald Young records the name of only one parent, Archibald's mother, Jean Young. The space where the father's name would normally appear is blank. Archibald was born on April 26 and baptised on April 29, 1733.

An archivist with National Records of Scotland has advised that there are a few possible reasons for a missing father's name, namely: (1) a clerical error, (2) the father had been away when the baptism occurred, for example, for work, (3) the father had died or (4) the child was illegitimate.

At first glance, the baptism record may appear to say that Jean Young was an unwed mother when her son was born in 1733. If this were the case, the Church of Scotland would have required Jean to undergo "kirk discipline" by



Paisley Abbey's April 1733 birth and baptism record for Archibald Young

admitting to her sin of getting pregnant out of marriage and being formally admonished by the church.

I have closely examined Paisley Abbey's *Kirk Session Records* for 1732 and 1733 and can find no reference to Jean Young. *Kirk Session Records* include the church's discipline proceedings. There are several individuals and couples each year that admit to various transgressions needing absolution, involving such sins as adultery, and a "single woman with child." Further, the baptism record lists Archibald as "LC" for lawful child. If a child were illegitimate, the term would be "NAT" for natural child.

As the child was lawful, that leaves clerical error, the father's absence from the baptism or the father's death as remaining possibilities. The likely father, Archibald Young, was alive in 1733.

My DNA results have helped me identify the person likely to be Archibald's (b. 1733) father. The Y chromosome records the history of the direct line of a man's father's, father's, father. The major organization that analyzed my Y-DNA has reported a match for me at the Y-111 level. This Y chromosome match has the surname Young, and his 18th-century ancestors lived near Paisley. Our DNA results predict a 95.7% chance that we have a common male ancestor during the past eight generations and a 99.6% chance that we have a common ancestor 12 generations ago.

As my Y-111 match and I have not been able to find a common ancestor after a high-level review of more than two hundred years of genealogy, our Y-111 prediction means there is a good probability that Jean Young's husband



Paisley Abbey—A parish church of the Church of Scotland; founded in 1163.

had the surname Young. A search of the Scottish government’s records reveals that in Renfrewshire there was only one Jean Young who married a man with the surname of Young during the thirty years before 1733. Jean Young and Archibald Young were “booked for proclamation in order to marriage” on October 24, 1719 in the parish of Abbey. Paisley Abbey’s records show that the children of Archibald and Jean Young were:

- Thomas Young (born on December 24 and baptised on December 26, 1725)
- John Young (born on July 5 and baptised on July 7, 1728)
- James Young (born on April 26 and baptised on May 3, 1730)
- Jean Young (born on September 19 and baptised on September 21, 1735)

In addition, there is one birth record in Abbey parish for a boy, Thomas, born to an Archibald Young on May 14 and baptised on May 21, 1721. In Abbey parish in 1721, mothers’ names were not recorded in church baptism records. It’s quite possible that the Thomas Young born in 1721 was Archibald and Jean Young’s first child and that he died in infancy, with the result that the name Thomas could be used again for their next son, born in 1725.

In Abbey parish, there is only one Archibald Young born between 1670 and 1705. This child was baptised on November 13, 1692, and his father was James Young. Jean Young was likely baptised on February 12, 1699, in Renfrew parish, the daughter of Thomas Young.

Archibald Young (b. 1733) and Margaret Young

As described above, my fourth great-grandfather Archibald Young was born on April 26, 1733. Paisley Abbey's registers state that "Archibald Young and Marg't Young both of this kirk were booked for proclamation in order to marriage" on November 17, 1763. Margaret's maiden name was Young. It is not clear to me when Margaret was born or who her parents were as there were a few Margaret Youngs born in Abbey parish alone who could have been Archibald's bride.

The Scots Ancestry Research Society advises that Archibald and Margaret Young had nine children, but from the reuse of names, the Society observes that only four likely lived beyond a young age. These children were all baptised in Paisley Abbey as follows:

- Robert Young (born on November 27 and baptised on December 2, 1764)
- Jean Young (born on December 6 and baptised on December 11, 1774)
- Janet Young (born on June 1 and baptised on June 5, 1777)
- Archibald Young (born on December 10 and baptised on December 12, 1779)

Records show that at the time of Jean Young's birth in 1774, the family was living in the neighbouring parish of Eaglesham.

Archibald Young (1779–1871) and Mary Dougall (1781–1870)

My third great-grandparents Archibald Young and Mary Dougall married in Paisley in 1803. Before looking at their life together, I will provide some historical information on Mary's family.

Mary Dougall's family history

In 1973, Richardson (Dick) Dougall (PhD, Yale) published a well-researched



Archibald and Mary (Dougall) Young, circa 1869.

464-page book tracing the descendants of James Dougall of Glasgow, Scotland. Richardson was deputy director of the Historical Office of the U.S. Department of State. Dick Dougall noted that there are several acceptable Scottish ways of spelling the Dougall name, including Dougal, Dougald, Dugal, Dowgell, Dowgel and Dowgall. Like this author, I have chosen to use a common spelling of the surname throughout this book.

Mary Dougall's great-grandparents and my sixth great-grandparents were James Dougall (circa 1699–1760) and Christian Buchanan (d. 1772). James Dougall was a weaver. Richardson Dougall's research indicates that James was very likely born in Cadder (pronounced "Cawder"). The village of Cadder is 10 kilometres north of central Glasgow.

Glasgow's "record of mortality" documents that James Dougall died on May 21, 1760, at 61 years of age, suggesting he was born around 1699. The Church of Scotland's registers on the Scottish government's website for Lanark County, including the parish of Cadder, for the 20-year period starting in

1690, record only one James Dougall baptised for the entire county. This child was baptised in the parish of Cadder on May 24, 1702 and his father was James Dougall.

While there is some uncertainty about the number of children James and Christian Dougall had, we know that they had a son John baptised in the parish of Barony on March 17, 1728. John's baptism record states that the couple was living in Caltoun (now Calton), a community on the River Clyde, just east of Glasgow's city centre.

Christian died on January 19, 1772. Both James Dougall and Christian Buchanan are buried in the Cathedral of Glasgow (St. Mungo's or High) Church.

Mary Dougall's grandfather John Dougall, like his father, was a weaver. John lived and worked in the Calton district of Glasgow, and later, in the Causeyside area of Paisley. The Church of Scotland's parish of Barony's January 26, 1750 marriage record notes that: "John Dougall and Mary Campbell both of this parish were married." The parish of Barony was on the eastern side of Glasgow for almost 400 years until recent times, when it was dissolved as a separate parish. The Church of Scotland's records show that Mary Campbell was baptised on January 23, 1726 in the parish of Rosneath, Dunbartonshire.

Mary Campbell's parents, Dugal Campbell and Janet McKinlay, lived in the small village of Garelochhead, Dunbartonshire, about 60 kilometres west of Glasgow. Her father's name raises a question as to whether Mary already had a Dougall family connection.



A good quality portable writing desk brought to Canada by Archibald Young (b.1779) in 1820 from Scotland.

Archibald Young and Mary Campbell
 was Married the 20th of July 1803
 Janet their first Born was Born
 May the 19th 1804 And was Baptised 17th
 Archibald was Born in March 16th 1806
 and was Baptised 20th Margaret was Born
 in March 13th 1808 and was Baptised 24th
 James was Born in June and was Baptised
 Duncan was Born March 18th 1813 and
 Departed this life on the 11th March 1814
 Mary was Born in January and was
 Baptised July 24 1815
 Barbara was Born
 Jean 11 was Born in Kingston 1821

Archibald and Mary Young's family record showing information on their marriage in July 1803 and the birth of their children.

John Dougall and Mary Campbell had nine children, although four died at a young age. The first seven children were born in the parish of Barony, and the last two were born in 1766 and 1769 in the parish of Paisley Burgh (or Low). John and Mary's son Duncan was born on February 14, 1762 in the parish of Barony.

John Dougall died, at 62 years of age, on November 2, 1790, and his wife, Mary died, at 67, on April 6, 1793. They are buried in Paisley.

Mary Dougall's father, Duncan (15), married Janet Gemmill (23) on February 19, 1777 in Glasgow, according to Richardson Dougall. The only record available today through the Church of Scotland's registry on the ScotlandsPeople website is a January 31, 1777 marriage proclamation of the parish of Paisley Burgh (or Low). Dick Dougall noted that Janet was born in the parish of Loudoun, Ayrshire, on March 28, 1753. The

ScotlandsPeople website does not have a record of her baptism in the parish of Loudoun.

Duncan Dougall, like his father and grandfather, was a weaver. Duncan and Janet Dougall lived in Paisley and had seven children, three of whom died at a young age. Their daughter Mary Dougall was born in Paisley on December 17 and baptised in Paisley Burgh (or Low) on December 23, 1781, as documented in the church's records.

Duncan (61) and Janet (72) died in Potterhill House on April 2, 1823 and October 9, 1825, respectively. Potterhill is an area in south Paisley.

**Archibald Young (1779–1871) and Mary Dougall (1781–1870),
continued**

Archibald Young and Margaret Young's youngest child, Archibald Young (23), married Mary Dougall (21) in Paisley Abbey on July 18, 1803 (banns read July 2), according to the Church of Scotland's records. They immigrated to Kingston, Upper Canada, in 1820 with six children. The Young family almost certainly boarded a ship in the port town of Greenock, 30 kilometres west of Paisley, and sailed to Quebec City in about 35 to 45 days; and then, travelled to Kingston, by water, over the next three to four weeks. Kingston, with a population of 4,000 in 1820, was the largest community in Upper Canada at that time. Upper and Lower Canada were created in 1791.

Archibald and Mary Young's eight children were born in Paisley and baptised in the Abbey, except for the youngest child who was born in Kingston. As recorded in Richardson Dougall's extensive family history, these eight children were:

Janet Young

Janet was born on May 14, 1804. She married John Anderson in Kingston about 1822. John was also born in Paisley on November 25, 1800. He served as postmaster for the town of Wyoming, near Sarnia. Janet and John Anderson had ten children. Janet Anderson (Young) passed away in Wyoming, at age 65, on October 22, 1869, and John died, at 77 years of age, on November 28, 1877.

Archibald Young

Archibald, my great-great-grandfather, was born on March 16, 1806. Archibald's life is discussed below.

Margaret Young

Margaret was born on March 15, 1808. She married David Gray, who was born in West Calder, Scotland, and came to Upper Canada in 1835. Margaret and David had five children. Margaret died, at age 39, in 1847. David passed away on October 30, 1892. Margaret and David are buried in the Lakeview Cemetery in Sarnia.

James Dougall Young

James was born on June 1, 1810. He married Jane Reid in Lanark County, Upper Canada, on May 3, 1833. Jane was born in Scotland, in 1813. Jane was the daughter of Peter Reid and Jane Harvie, who are discussed below. The couple had nine children. James was a farmer. James passed away, at age 63, on July 28, 1873. Jane died from a wagon accident, at 65 years of age, in Plympton, Ontario, on July 13, 1878. Both are buried in the Lakeview Cemetery in Sarnia.

Duncan Young

Duncan was born on March 18, 1813, but died in infancy a year later on March 11, 1814.

Mary Young

Mary was born on January 21, 1815. She married Alexander Wark on January 20, 1832 and they raised seven children. Alexander died on March 2, 1846; Mary died, at age 71, on January 17, 1887. Both are buried in Plympton-Wyoming.

Barbara Young

Barbara was born on October 11, 1817. She married John Smith in Enniskillen Township, Lambton County, on December 21, 1838. John Smith was born in Glasgow, on October 11, 1815. He was a farmer but also served as magistrate, coroner and assessor for Enniskillen. This couple had nine children. Barbara died in Enniskillen, on May 4, 1890, at age 72. John died on January 1, 1907, at 91 years of age, in Warwick, Ontario. Both Barbara Young and John Smith are buried in Wyoming, Ontario.

Jane (Jean) Bartley Young

Jane was born in 1821 in Kingston, Upper Canada. In 1844, Jane married Duncan Ferguson who was born in Glasgow, about 1821. Jane and Duncan had eight children. Duncan passed away in 1885 in Plympton, at around 64 years of age. Jane died in Plympton, at about age 82, on March 2, 1903.

Archibald Young (b. 1779) was a merchant. He owned and operated a dry goods and hardware store, likely in Paisley, Scotland and, certainly later, in Kingston and Sarnia, Ontario.

Eighteen years after arriving in Canada, Archibald and Mary Young and their family moved about 550 kilometres west from Kingston to Lambton County in 1838. European settlers started to arrive in both Lambton County and the county's largest community, Port Sarnia, in the 1830s. By 1846, Sarnia, as it is now called, had a population of 400 and was continuing to expand rapidly. Each new arrival represented a potential customer for the Youngs' hardware and general merchandise store in Sarnia. Today, Sarnia's population is 71,000.

Alexander Mackenzie was Prime Minister of Canada from 1873 to 1878. Three of Alexander's brothers – Hope Fleming, Charles and James Mackenzie – married descendants of Archibald and Mary (Dougall) Young.

- Hope Fleming Mackenzie and Charles Mackenzie married daughters of Archibald and Mary's son, Archibald Young (born in 1806), as discussed later in this chapter.
- James Mackenzie married Mary Gray, a granddaughter of Archibald and Mary Young, through the Young's third oldest child, Margaret, who married David Gray, as described above. Mr. Gray was born in West Calder, Scotland, and immigrated to Upper Canada in 1835. Mary (born in 1839 and died, at age 80, in Sarnia on April 8, 1919) was Margaret and David Gray's eldest child. James Mackenzie was born in Scotland in 1831. James and Mary's five children were born between 1862 and 1870.

The 1861 Canada West census of the township of Plympton in Lambton

County records both Archibald and Mary as 81 years of age, and his vocation as farmer. By the 1871 census, Mary had died and Archibald was living in his son Archibald and daughter-in-law Helen's home in Sarnia.

The September 1870 *Sarnia Observer* provides the following obituary for Mary Young (Dougall):

Died—At the Township Plympton, on the 24th instant, Mary Dougall, wife of Archibald Young, Sen., aged 89 years [*sic*]. Deceased born in Paisley, Scotland in 1781, married in that town in 1803, and with her husband and family came to the County of Lanark [Upper Canada], with the settlers from West of Scotland, in 1820, removing to the Township of Plympton in 1838, where she has resided ever since. She leaves a large number of relatives to respect her memory. Her own family numbered eight but grandchildren number seventy, and her great grandchildren over a hundred, most of them being alive. Her aged partner still survives and enjoys a remarkable degree of bodily and mental vigor, considering his advanced years.

Plympton (now Plympton-Wyoming) is a small town about 25 kilometres immediately east of Sarnia in Lambton County.

The April 21, 1871 *Sarnia Observer* reports on the death of Archibald Young (1779–1871) as follows:

Died—Here on the morning of the 20th inst., Mr. Archibald Young, Senior, aged 91 years and 4 months. Deceased was a native of Paisley, Scotland and came to Canada in 1820, first settling in the County of Lanark, and removing thence to Plympton about 18 years since—In September last on the death of his wife, he removed to Sarnia where he resided with his son, Archibald Young, Esq. till his death. The funeral will take place from Mr. Young's residence, Christina Street, on Saturday the 22nd inst. one o'clock. Friends and acquaintances are invited to attend.

Archibald Young (1806–1881) and Helen Reid (1810–1892)

Archibald and Mary Young's son Archibald was born in Paisley on March 16,



Circa 1863—Helen (also Ellen) and Archibald Young.

1806. The Reverend Dr. Gemmell married Archibald (24) and Helen (19) (sometimes Ellen) Reid in the township of Lanark, Upper Canada, on March 19, 1830. Before looking at Archibald and Helen's life together, I will provide some historical information on Helen's family.

Helen Reid's family

The Church of Scotland's records document that Peter Reid and Jane Harvie were "booked in order to marriage" on November 8, 1805 in Old Kilpatrick, Dunbarton. Church records also show that their daughter Helen (also Hellen) Reid was born in Paisley, on September 7 and baptised on October 8, 1810.

Parish registers show that Helen Reid's father, Peter, was born on April 4 and baptised on April 5, 1778 in Old (or West) Kilpatrick, Dunbarton. This register shows that his parents were Peter Reid and Margaret McKindlay.

Parish registers also document that Jean Harvie was born on December 28, 1784 in Glasgow parish, Glasgow City, Lanark County, and that she was

the daughter of James Harvie and Elison Watson. She was given the name Jean at birth but was known as Jane most of her life.

Peter Reid worked as a weaver in Scotland. Peter and Jane Reid sailed to Canada, in June 1820, with their children on the ship *Commerce* that travelled from Greenock to Quebec City. Greenock is a port town 30 kilometres west of Paisley. Passenger information for this sailing shows that the Reids' former residence was in Bridgeton parish, Barony (Glasgow), which is about 20 kilometres east of Paisley.

Peter and Jane Reid's nine children were: Margaret (1806–1873), William (1808–1893), Helen/Ellen (1810–1892), Jane/Jean (1813–1878), Peter (1815–1815), Peter (1816–1899), Elizabeth (1819–1895), Mary (1823–1865) and Agnes (1824–1829).

Peter, Jane and their children settled on a farm near Middleville, Upper Canada. Middleville is about 115 kilometres north of Kingston. The property is the east half of Lot 13, Concession 4, Lanark Township.

Jane Reid (Harvie) was visiting in Port Sarnia (now Sarnia) when she caught pneumonia and died, at age 60, on December 29, 1844. Peter's April 19, 1860 will made provision for "a monumental headstone, of a style common to persons of her condition in life" to be erected in Sarnia where his wife, Jane, is buried. Peter died, at 87 years of age, on September 29, 1865 in Lanark County, Canada West.

Archibald Young (1806–1881) and Helen Reid (1810–1892), continued

According to a book of brief sketches of certain officials of the county of Lambton in Ontario, dating from 1852 to 1917, Archibald Young, Jr., was the first elected warden of the county. He was first appointed to the position of provisional warden and then elected warden in 1853 and again in 1860.

Archibald Young owned and operated a successful dry goods and hardware business, as his father Archibald had before him. The business was called A. Young & Son. An advertisement in the *Sarnia Observer*, on November 20, 1856, announced that the family hardware store that fronted onto Lochiel Street was now stocked with food items in the basement; the "Grocery & Provision Store."

As reported in the *Sarnia Observer*, in February 1857, Archibald Young acquired controlling interest in the stock of the London & Sarnia Plank

Road from a third party for £150. The purchase price was reported to equal one-third of the annual tolls!

The Canadian Historical Review of March 1957 (published by University of Toronto Press) reports that Archibald Young was “a prosperous merchant in Port Sarnia, county of Lambton, which was then attached to Kent for purposes of Parliamentary representation.” The article is entitled “The Independent Member for Kent Reports, 1853” and provides a detailed interpretation by Dr. Careless of the university’s history department in a March 22, 1853 handwritten, twelve-page letter. Professor Careless received his doctorate from Harvard University. The letter was written by George Brown to Archibald Young on his first session in the Parliament of Canada.

George Brown was the elected representative for Kent, Canada West. Brown founded what is today *The Globe and Mail* newspaper, and is a Father of Canadian Confederation. Dr. Careless’ article included a reproduction of the entire contents of Brown’s letter. Brown’s letter to Archibald Young was seen by Professor J.M.S. Careless as significant because it is one of the few to survive from this period and because it is “in the nature of a report on his politics at the moment.” This letter was donated, in 2012, by the Young family to the Archives of Ontario.

Archibald and Helen Young had 11 children:

- Jane Harvey Young – born in Lanark County, Upper Canada, on December 4, 1830 and died in Sarnia on December 22, 1855
- Archibald Young – born in Lanark County, on August 31, 1832 and died in Toronto, on October 29, 1889; Archibald established the Manitoba Land Office in downtown Toronto in the 1870s, working with correspondents in Portage La Prairie, Brandon and Winnipeg. Before moving to Toronto, Archibald worked as a commission merchant and petroleum dealer in Sarnia.
- Peter Reid Young – born in Lanark County, on January 10, 1835 and died in Selkirk, Manitoba, on November 18, 1911
- Mary Dougall Young – born in Lanark County, on July 13, 1837 and died in Clifford, Ontario, on September 14, 1872
- Helen Reid Young – (see below)
- Susan Baby Young – born in Sarnia, on September 9, 1841 and drowned in Sarnia August 7, 1862 (see below)

- Agnes Young – (see below)
- David Young – my great-grandfather, born in Sarnia, on February 18, 1847 and died in Winnipeg, on October 11, 1931 (Dr. David Young's family is discussed in Chapter 11)
- James Bruce Young – born in Sarnia, on March 19, 1849 and drowned in Sarnia, August 7, 1862 (see below)
- William Reid Young – born in Sarnia, September 7, 1851, married Catherine Somerville (Chapter 9) and died in Selkirk, Manitoba
- John Edward Young – born in Sarnia, on March 27, 1853 and drowned in Sarnia, on August 7, 1862 (see below)

Alexander Mackenzie (1822–1892) was Prime Minister of Canada from 1873 to 1878. As discussed earlier in this chapter, three of Alexander Mackenzie's brothers married descendants of Archibald and Mary (Dougall) Young.

- James Mackenzie married Mary Gray, a granddaughter of Archibald and Mary Young, as described on page 137.
- Hope Fleming Mackenzie married Helen Reid Young, daughter of Archibald and Helen Young. Hope and Helen were married in Sarnia on March 2, 1860. Helen was born on October 4, 1839 in Lanark County, Upper Canada, and died in Grosse Point, Michigan, on January 6, 1929, at age 89. Hope Mackenzie was born near Dunkeld, Scotland, and moved to Canada West, in 1843. He was a cabinet maker, and later involved in shipbuilding. He was elected to Parliament for Lambton County, Canada West, from 1859 to 1861, and in 1863, he was elected for North Oxford, Canada West. Helen and Hope had three children, before he died in 1865 in Sarnia. In 1875, Helen married William Roy of Pitlochry, Perthshire, Scotland, who was born about 1837. The second marriage produced two more children.
- Charles Mackenzie married Agnes Young, youngest daughter of Archibald and Helen Young, in Sarnia, on April 6, 1862 when Agnes was 18. Agnes was born in Sarnia, January 31, 1844 and died, at age 67, in the same city on May 8, 1911. Charles was born in Dunkeld,

Perthshire, Scotland, on October 5, 1832 and came to Canada in 1843 and to Sarnia four years later. He was a hardware merchant in Lambton County, president of Lambton Loan & Investment Co. of Sarnia, and later, an elected Member of Parliament for West Riding of Lambton County (1889–1894). Charles and Agnes Mackenzie had eleven children.

On February 7, 1856, Archibald and Helen's son Archibald Young (1832–1889) was appointed a lieutenant in the Fourth Battalion of the Lambton Militia by His Excellency Sir Edmond Walter Head, Baronet, Governor General of British North America.

Tragedy befell Archibald and Helen Young's home on August 7, 1862, when a disastrous boating accident killed three of their children—Susan (20), James (13) and John (9). These three children, along with their brothers, Peter (27) and William (10), went sailing on the St. Clair River after Peter closed their shop that fateful summer evening. The St. Clair River runs through Sarnia, separating the province of Ontario from the state of Michigan.

The August 8, 1862 *Sarnia Observer* reported on the tragedy, in part, with the following account:

When about the middle of the river, the boat unfortunately came into collision with a vessel then being towed upstream, the boat struck with some force owing to the stiff breeze blowing at the time and immediately sunk. Mr. [Peter] Young made a momentary but desperate effort to save his sister and hold on by the chains of the vessel, but the current carried them instantly out of his reach; he himself miraculously escaped. The vessel's yawl was instantly manned and lowered and the crew succeeded in saving William but Miss Young and the other brothers had sunk before help could reach them . . . Miss Young was . . . a cheerful, happy girl, universally loved. This dreadful misfortune to one of our best and well-known families has thrown a deep gloom over the Town; what renders it still more painful is the absence of Mr. and Mrs. [Archibald] Young, who are presently in England [actually Scotland].

Two of the children who died on August 7, James and Susan, each wrote

RECOVERY OF THE BODIES OF THE PERSONS
DROWNED NEAR SARNIA.—PORT HURON, Aug. 14.
—The bodies of Miss Young and her two brothers, whose melancholy fate by drowning was noticed in a recent number of the *London Free Press*, were ~~found~~ the 14th inst., at Sarnia, opposite which place the sad accident occurred. The body of Miss Young was found at half-past five o'clock a. m., on the 12th inst., having floated ashore one mile below the village of Moore, on the Canada shore; that of the elder of the two brothers came ashore in a similar manner the next morning, one mile and a half above that place, and the other was discovered floating down the middle of the river by Miss McGill, and towed ashore by her to the village itself, notwithstanding the tearful entreaties of the scared young ferryboy to prevent her. The admirable conduct of this young woman, who resides with her parents on Corunna line in the township of Moore, is deserving of the highest praise.—*London Free Press.*

letters to their parents in the days just before their drowning. James (13) wrote two letters dated July 29 and August 5. His letters are addressed “Dear Papa and Mama” and signed “I remain your affectionate son, James B. Young, Sarnia, CW” (Canada West). James updated his parents on such things as the birth of a colt, calf and bull as well as the status of haying and clover harvesting on their farm. He noted that older brother David (15) knocked a squirrel down from the fence and “now it is living nicely.” James apologized to his mom that he had not been successful in keeping his promise to her to keep the weeds out of the garden as it was hard work but he promised “to try, try again.” James said that he and his brother Archy (30) had piled all the lumber all over again and separated the different kinds of lumber. James reported that neighbourhood boys are beginning to steal apples from the orchard and the mayor has reassured him that he would “send a constable to put them in jail and I think I will adopt that plan.”

Older sister Susan (20) wrote a short letter on the backside of James’ one-page, August 5th letter addressed to “My dear Papa & Mama” from Spring Bank. She wrote that she had been busy making preserves and doing other things. She advised her parents that the youngest child (who was teething) of a family friend had been buried the previous day. Susan said “Mr. McMaster’s

brother arrived here last evening and told us about his having seen you.” Her letter was signed “Good bye with love & kisses and hoping you are well, I remain your affectionate daughter, Susie.”

The January 1, 1866 *Sarnia Observer* records the sale of certain of Archibald Young’s assets—in particular, the store and wharf at Front and Lochiel Street to J. Crawford, merchant, for \$4,800; the Spring Bank family homestead to C. Mackenzie for \$3,550 (likely his son-in-law Charles Mackenzie); and waterfront lots in front of Spring Bank to Jas. Bell for \$1,500.

Archibald Young wrote two letters dated February 22, 1867 and March 20, 1871 to his son “Dave,” while David was in medical school at Queen’s University in Kingston, Ontario.

His father noted, in the February 1867 letter, that he had become aware that David’s medical education would be four years (and maybe more), and not three years, as he had previously thought. He said he was confident that David (19) would “come up to the mark” and “do well even though he started a few weeks behind some of the other students.” He asked his son if he was “working on parts of a body or a whole body?” He explained that there should be “plenty of bodys [*sic*] between the hospital and ___ so that there will no temptation to steal them.” He noted that David had not told him if he had “called any of the ministers yet or wether [*sic*] you have been invited to any of their houses or wether [*sic*] you have been introduced to any of the Kingston notables.” Archibald commented to his son, “you cannot give too many particulars as to what you do and see as everything connected with you has a double interest for me.” Archibald reported that the “weather has been very mild for some time back, the ice is all left the [St. Clair] River as far as we can see.” In his March 1871 letter to David, Archibald extended congratulations and said “we are all rejoiced that you succeeded . . . and will graduate from medical school.” He advised that his brother Archy (then 39) had written to him. Archibald’s handwriting is a challenge to read, but he spent most of the letter offering some thoughts on what his son might do over the next several months after graduation. He offered some views but concluded by saying he looked forward to hearing of David’s decision. Red River was one of the options mentioned briefly. Archibald also noted that David’s grandfather was “still very unwell,” spent most of his time in bed and a doctor regularly attended to him. Archibald (b. 1779) died on April 20, 1871.

Archibald and Helen Young are recorded in the 1871 Ontario census

in Sarnia at 65 and 60 years old, respectively. His occupation is listed as merchant. This census notes that the couple's son William (then 19) had recently moved to Manitoba as a member of the volunteer militia. William's occupation is listed as merchant. David (24) is the only other child listed with his parents in the 1871 census, with his profession noted as "doctor of medicine."



Circa 1870, Four generations of Archibald Youngs: standing, 1832–1889, center left, 1806–1881, center right, 1779–1871, front, 1863–1935.



Helen Young (Reid) circa 1885.

On May 17, 1872, the *Sarnia Observer* reported on Archibald Young as follows:

As the readers of the *Observer* are aware, Mr. A. Young, who has for the past thirty three years been a resident of Sarnia, was lately appointed to the Office of Steward of the Blind Asylum, Brantford. [Brantford is about 200 kilometres directly east of Sarnia and about 40 kilometres west of Hamilton.] The occasion of his departure was thought to be opportune for the presentation of a numerously signed address, expressing the general esteem in which he has so long been held, accompanied by a substantial token, to remind him of all old friends and associates; and the presentation took place on the evening of Monday last. Hon. A. Vidal, on behalf of himself and others of Mr. Young's friends, accordingly presented him with a suitable address, in which references were made to Mr. Young's services in the numerous public positions he had from time to time filled with so much credit to himself and satisfaction to the Committees, and complimenting

him in appropriate terms on the energy, sound judgment and ability he had discharged his various public duties.

Some appropriate verbal remarks were at the same time made by Mr. Vidal, who then presented Mr. Young with a valuable gold watch and chain, which had been purchased as an accompaniment to the address. Lieut. Col. Davis and Rev. J. Thomson also made suitable remarks to which Mr. Young replied with much emotion, expressing the deep sense of the kindly feeling and appreciation of his character expressed by so many of his fellow Townsmen, so many of whom he had known for the greater part of his life, and assuring them of the pain it was to him, at his advanced age, to have to tear away from his old friends and old associations. He trusted, however, that he should be able to discharge the duties of his new position, as to give satisfaction to the Government and to retain the good opinions they themselves had so kindly expressed towards him.

The 1881 Manitoba census taken in April, just days before Archibald died, shows Archibald and Helen Young were living in St. Andrews. The couple is listed in the census beside David and Rosina Young and their children, Hunter (4), Mary (3) and Walter (9 months). The census records that both the senior Youngs are Presbyterian and born in Scotland. His occupation is recorded as a farmer.

Archibald died in St. Andrews, Manitoba, on May 1, 1881, at 75 years of age. Sometime after his death, his wife, Helen, returned to Sarnia to be near family there. Archibald is buried in Little Britain Cemetery, in Manitoba, where other family members are laid to rest. Helen died, at age 81, on February 5, 1892, and is buried at Lakeview Cemetery in Sarnia, along with her three children, who drowned in the 1862 boating accident.

Archibald and Helen Young's grandson, Archibald Hope Young (he was the son of their son, Archibald), was a highly regarded professor of history at Trinity College in Toronto. He was born on February 6, 1863, and died, at 72 years of age, on April 6, 1935.

The April 9, 1935 *Globe and Mail* newspaper reported on Professor Young as follows:

A CULTURED CITIZEN DIES – The death of Prof. Archibald Hope Young, for more than forty years a member of the staff at Trinity College, is a distinct loss to Canadian scholarship and to the good citizenship of the country. As a teacher Professor Young left upon a host of young men the imprint of his cultured mind, and in this work alone the influence he exerted is of a value beyond computation.

While on the staff of his beloved Trinity College Professor Young occupied many posts. On the teaching side, he had been lecturer on modern languages, special instructor in German, and during the later years of his life Emeritus Professor of German and Research Professor of Canadian History. As an executive, he had been Registrar, Governor, Dean of Residence; also a senator of the University of Toronto and the University of Strassburg, Germany and during his long career as a teacher, he spent several periods abroad in post graduate work.

To the public, Professor Young was perhaps best known as a student of Canadian history, and on this subject he wielded a prolific pen. He was an authority on community life, and his books and contributions to the press have thrown upon local history a much needed and invaluable light. For example, “The Parish Register of Kingston, 1785–1811,” reclaimed for posterity the story of that neighbourhood, a story which otherwise might have been lost.

This was the work to which Professor Young devoted much of his time, and it was a labour of love. In the words of Archbishop Owen, Anglican Primate of All Canada, “his knowledge of history, especially Canadian history was profound.” He was a zealous adherent of the Anglican Church, and had made a special study of the history of the Diocese of Toronto. During 1902–03 Professor Young contributed to the *Globe* a series of special articles on European affairs, which revealed his grasp of Old World conditions and problems. An eminent historian and a man of many scholarly attainments, has been removed from the scene of his manifold and useful activities.

Archibald Hope Young never married and was survived by brothers, Dr. E.

Young and Bruce Young, and four sisters, Miss Esther Young, Mrs. E. Acrigg, Miss J. H. Young and Miss Mackenzie Young.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Young family is related to the author's family:

1. Jean Young
2. Archibald Young married Margaret Young
3. Archibald Young married Mary Dougall
4. Archibald Young married Helen Reid
5. David Young married Rosina Somerville
6. Walter Young married Frances Flett
7. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
8. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
9. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
10. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

David Young and Rosina Arabella Somerville

My great-grandfather David Young (Chapter 10) was born in Sarnia, Ontario, on February 18, 1847. He began his medical career in 1871 at Lower Fort Garry, Manitoba. The year before Dr. Young arrived on the prairies, Manitoba had joined Confederation on July 15, 1870, as the fifth province, with a population of almost 12,000 (see page 254). David Young returned to Sarnia to be married by John Thompson, a Presbyterian minister, to Rosina Arabella Somerville (Chapter 9) on September 11, 1872. Rosina was born in Huntingdon, Quebec, on December 27, 1847.

Sarnia is a city in southwestern Ontario, that is on the border with the state of Michigan. It is located where the three upper Great Lakes empty into the St. Clair River. Huntingdon is a small town located 75 kilometres southwest of Montreal, and not far from the border with New York state.

David and Rosina's trip from Sarnia to Lower Fort Garry at St. Andrews and the Rapids took time in 1872, typically about three weeks. They travelled by boat from Sarnia to Detroit; then by train to Chicago on the Michigan Central Railway; then on the Mississippi Railway from Chicago to La Crosse, Wisconsin; then up the Mississippi by paddleboat, calling at woodyards for fuel en route to St. Paul, Minnesota; then by stage coach from St. Paul to Georgetown, a Hudson's Bay Company warehouse; from there they took the *SS International*, a stern-paddle wheeler that brought them to Winnipeg; and for the final leg of their journey they drove by carriage to the Rapids at St. Andrews, now Lockport, where they would have been greeted by David's



1896 L-R David, Philip (kneeling), Walter, Alex, Hunter, Mary and Rosina Young.

brothers, Peter (36) and William (20), who were living in St. Andrews. St. Andrews is about 25 kilometres north of Winnipeg, on the Red River, and Selkirk is another 10 kilometres north of St. Andrews.

Dr. Young began work at the Hudson's Bay Company post at Lower Fort Garry in 1871 as a newly qualified doctor serving as resident physician and surgeon. This HBC post continued to be an important trading post for the company at this time. William Flett (Chapter 14) was a senior executive at the "Stone Fort" when Dr. Young arrived. Flett was a generation older than Young, but William Flett's granddaughter Frances Flett would, in 1907, marry Dr. Young's son Walter.

A magazine published in 1957, to mark the 75th anniversary of the town of Selkirk, Manitoba, includes a full-page story about Dr. Young and his contribution to Selkirk. Below is information from this publication:

- Ten years before our town was incorporated, a handsome young doctor came from the east to set a pattern in public service as rare and inspiring as it was unique, even in those days of unusual

careers. “A wonderful doctor and a wonderful family”—is what old-timers said of Dr. David Young, general practitioner, and later, first superintendent at the Manitoba Asylum here. Dr. Young worked day and night during the scurvy epidemic that swept through Lower Fort Garry district following the grasshopper plague of 1875, and a year later, was sent to fight the smallpox scourge that killed so many Icelandic immigrants at Gimli.

- In 1876–77, “the plague was so severe [in Gimli] that hundreds died of the disease. While ministering to the disease, Dr. Young contracted smallpox and was taken to his home—Hawthorne Lodge and isolated upstairs.” *The Manitoba Free Press* reported on January 5, 1877 that “Dr. Young, sufficiently convalescent, has returned to Gimli to resume his duties there.”
- The Rapids, now Lockport, [is] where his brother, P.R. Young had opened a general store in 1868. Peter Young was superintendent of Little Britain Presbyterian Church Sunday School for many years.
- Another brother, William, was secretary-treasurer of the



Peter Young's general store at St. Andrews, established in 1868; the year he arrived in Manitoba.

municipality of St. Clements for many years. [St. Clements municipality includes East Selkirk and Lockport. William was born in 1851 and was four years younger than David. William's and David's wives were sisters.]

- On January 1, 1877, by his appointment to the Clandeboye Indian Agency, he became the first Indian Agent and Medical Officer appointed in the North-West Territories, as western Canada was then called.
- In 1873, when the North-West Mounted Police (NWMP) force was organized at Lower Fort Garry, there was no regular surgeon, so Dr. Young acted as Captain and Medical Officer, examining all the recruits (161 officers and men). [This was the origin of the NWMP in western Canada.]
- Prominent in the Masonic Order in Manitoba, Dr. Young was a past master of Lisgar Lodge (No. 2) and past senior warden of the Grand Lodge, AF & AM. He was also a life-member of the Manitoba Club, Winnipeg.

The Manitoba Asylum for the Insane, as it was first known, officially opened its doors in Selkirk to patients on May 25, 1886. The facility was built with a capacity to serve 167. The first 59 patients were transferred from nearby Lower Fort Garry. Dr. David Young was the institution's first medical superintendent from June 1, 1884 until March 1, 1912. Today, this care facility is the Selkirk Mental Health Centre.

Dr. Young was a member of the town of Selkirk's first council in 1882. Young Avenue in Selkirk is named in honour of Dr. Young.

The following is an excerpt from a 1947 paper obtained from the Manitoba Historical Society website on *Early Doctors of Red River and Manitoba*:

The infant province found many problems on its hands, among them being the care of the insane. These were first cared for in the provincial penitentiary, situated first at Lower Fort Garry and afterward at Stony Mountain, but in 1884 the Provincial Government, recognizing the need for separate care of mental patients, appointed Dr. David Young as medical superintendent of the projected mental hospital at Selkirk. In 1886 the first buildings were completed, and Dr. Young



David & Rosina Young, circa 1910, age 63.

remained at the head of the institution till 1912, when he retired to private life.

Dr. Young was born in 1847 and graduated in medicine from Queen's University, Kingston, in 1871. In June of that year he came to Manitoba and engaged in practice near Lower Fort Garry. He was married in the following year, and he and his wife for many years dispensed hospitality in their charming home [Hawthorne Lodge] on the bank of the Red River.

The grasshopper plague of 1875 caused such scarcity of fresh vegetables that an epidemic of scurvy broke out, and Dr. Young laboured day and night to aid those suffering with that disease. As a psychiatrist he brought qualities of skill, insight and kindness into his treatment of the mentally afflicted. He died in Winnipeg on October 16, 1931, at the advanced age of 84 years, and was buried in Little Britain Cemetery, near his old home on the Red River.

In 1990, to commemorate his early service, a plaque was dedicated by Lower Fort Garry to Dr. Young, which is headed: "Dr. David Young, Esq. MD, Pioneer Physician and Psychiatrist." The plaque reads:

Dr. David Young graduated in 1871 from Queen's University, Kingston (Ontario) and set up a medical practice at St. Andrew's



Rapids (Lockport, MB) in the same year. Dr. Young served Lower Fort Garry and community through smallpox and scurvy epidemics but is best remembered for his compassionate treatment for the mentally ill. Dr. Young established the first mental hospital in Manitoba initially at Lower Fort Garry in 1885 and later in Selkirk serving as medical superintendent until 1912. In the 19th century, many institutions in eastern Canada were merely holding cells, without benefit of therapy and with little chance of release. The institutions at Lower Fort Garry and Selkirk were known both for their humane approach to mental illness and for Dr. Young's attempts to provide a safe and comfortable environment for the patients. Today, Dr. Young's dispensary still stands inside the north wall of Lower Fort Garry, a reminder of his quarter century of service.

To celebrate his retirement in 1912, David and Rosina took a trip on the SS *Minnesota* leaving from Seattle, Washington, for Yokohama, Japan. They were away from Selkirk for at least three months (March, April and May). It's interesting to recall that the *Titanic* sank in April 1912. The *Minnesota* was

owned and operated by the Great Northern Steamship Company and was first commissioned in 1905. It carried both freight and passengers. Rosina noted in a letter during the trip that there were “over sixty cabin passengers so the evening in the parlor is quite gay, all dressed for dinner of course.” She also said that she and her husband “are very comfortable . . . this is such a large boat.” The *Minnesota* was a U.S. registered steamship; when commissioned, it was the largest in the world at 630 feet in length.

Hawthorne Lodge is two kilometres south of the Stone Fort and was undoubtedly one of the finest homes in the Red River Settlement. This home was a two-storey house measuring 48 feet wide and 48 feet deep, with a full basement. David Young and his family lived in Hawthorne Lodge from 1872 to 1887, when the family moved to Selkirk because Dr. Young had begun work as superintendent of the newly formed mental hospital there. David and his family lived in the mental asylum for about five years, until 1892, when a dedicated house was completed for the superintendent, which was located less than 200 metres from the main hospital.

A 1945 article posted on the Manitoba Historical Society website, titled “Houses Down the River,” gave some background to the Young family home, Hawthorne Lodge, in Little Britain, Manitoba. The following are a few excerpts:



William (11) & David (15) Young, circa 1862



Dr. David Young (25) circa 1872. COURTESY OF DAVE DUDLEY

- When John H. [*sic*] Harriott, a retired chief factor of the HBC, looked round for a home in Red River, ... he found this spot, high on the banks of the river just below the Stone Fort [i.e., Lower Fort Garry]. He built his house of stone in the Georgian period familiar to him, an Englishman. ... Mr. Harriott built round it a stockade and also planted prickly hawthorne, a protection that together would keep out most trespassers. So the house got its name.
- An unnamed writer of 1859 gave this account: “The house was built of limestone quarried from the native rock, the material used in the better class of dwelling in the Selkirk settlement. Building his house, he left in his spacious dining room an arching alcove for a sideboard.”
- “it had stood thirty years empty.” Two men owned it after David Young, Ross Sutherland and Robert Jacob; neither of these families lived in it. An assessment of the home in August 1904 for Mr. Sutherland by Henry Bird, who “found the walls in a dangerous condition, owing to the creek bank having given way. The walls are two and a half feet thick . . . 15,000 feet of lumber good for re-use.” The seventh owner bought it in 1918 and built a new, smaller home on the property.

Dr. Young wrote from Selkirk, September 25, 1904, to Ross Sutherland, Winnipeg, these facts about the house: “It was built by Harriott in 1854, who occupied it till his death; it was sold to Judge Black who occupied it till he went to England; Hon. Alfred Boyd had it next. I bought it from him in 1872 [for \$5,000] and it was our home till 1887. Each time it was sold the sale included the furniture, bedding, linen and provisions that were in it at the time, so that the new occupier had nothing to do but move in and begin housekeeping at once. Fashions have changed since those good old times.”

About 1880, David Young purchased a 12-acre parcel of land (lot D.9.s.70) in St. Andrews that ran from the Red River to the slough. Some time later, the town acquired the adjacent land both north and south of this for a public park. Young’s parcel of land was initially acquired in the hope that it could be resold to the railway company at a profit, if the new Canadian Pacific rail line were to come through Selkirk, as many thought it would. CPR executives later chose to acquire cheaper land (that flooded annually) to the south at Winnipeg for their railway.



OUR OLD HOME

About midway between St. Andrew's Locks and Lower Fort Garry
on the Red River.

Built in 1858 and occupied by a Chief Factor of the Hudson's Bay Company
It was purchased in 1871 by David Young, M.D. and became
the home of the Young family until 1887.

Hawthorne Lodge.

In 1922, the mayor of Selkirk requested that the town use David Young's land as a park, in consideration there would be no taxes. In 1958, David's five children, who had inherited this property, were pleased to donate this property to Selkirk for its permanent use as a park.

After retiring in 1912, David and Rosina moved to Winnipeg and lived at 494 Camden Place. Their son Walter and his family lived next door at 492 Camden, as recorded in the 1916 census. Both homes were built by Fowler & Young, a new construction company, owned in part by David and Rosina's youngest son, Alexander.

David died, at 84 years of age, on the morning of October 16, 1931. The *Winnipeg Free Press Evening Bulletin* that day carried a front page article and picture of Dr. Young under the headline, "Oldest Physician in Manitoba Dies of Long Illness." The article notes that he died at his Camden Place home after an illness that had "lingered over the past year" and explains Dr. Young's work with the 1875 grasshopper plague, scurvy, the asylum and other community associations. He was predeceased by Rosina, who died December 16, 1917, just short of her 70th birthday.

David and Rosina are both buried, along with their infant daughter and their daughter Mary Doupe, at Little Britain Cemetery, near Lower Fort Garry.

MY PIONEER CANADIAN FAMILY



Circa 1910 L-R standing Alex, Hunter, Walter; centre David, Mary, Rosina, Philip; front Frances and Birdie Young.



Dr. David Young Building at the Selkirk Mental Health Centre on November 27, 2009.

On November 27, 2009, the Reception Building (built in 1923 and since updated) that is part of the modern day Selkirk Mental Health Centre (located on 100 acres with several other buildings) was dedicated and renamed the Dr. David Young Building. This building is 55,412 square feet.

David and Rosina Young had eight children, five of whom reached adulthood. Robert Somerville Young (June 26, 1873–August 3, 1880) drowned at age seven, and Archibald Bruce Young (October 6, 1874–February 15, 1877) died at two years of age. A third child, Margaret Somerville Young, died shortly after birth in September 1895.

Some information is provided below on the children who reached adulthood—Hunter, Mary, Walter (Chapter 22), Philip and Alexander Young. Philip was born in Moore Station, Quebec, and each of the others was born in the family home, Hawthorne Lodge, in Little Britain, Manitoba, located about two kilometres south of Lower Fort Garry.

Hunter Young

David and Rosina Young's son Richard Hunter Young (July 27, 1876–August 27, 1965) lived most of his adult life in Manitoba.

Later in life, Hunter was asked to describe himself as a boy; his response: "I suppose, to put it mildly, you would describe me as a naughty child." As one example, he said that, at about seven years of age, a governess was employed to look after the education of Hunter and his younger sister, Mary. This lasted a very short time before Hunter was declared "unmanageable" and sent to a local school, but quickly picked up the unique Red River Settlement dialect called "Bungie" (also Bungi and Bungee). Bungie is a combination of Cree, Gaelic and Scots English. As a consequence, at nine years of age, he was sent to Carlton School in Winnipeg where he boarded with a friend of his parents. Hunter later attended Selkirk Public School for four years until 1891 when he enrolled in St. John's School, and later, St. John's College.

As a student at St. John's College of the University of Manitoba, Hunter heard about the gold discovery in the Yukon in 1896. He dropped out of university when he was 20 and headed for the Yukon with 32 men from Winnipeg, on June 1, 1897.

When Hunter was in Dawson, he found a business partner; they cut logs 18 miles up the Klondike River and rafted them to a sawmill for

\$100 a thousand feet. This allowed him to “salt away enough to get a small cabin in Dawson as headquarters, together with tools and provisions to enable me do the assessment work” on the Sulphur Creek property described below.

In a written summary of his life, Hunter described rafting logs on the Klondike River: “The logs had to scale 10" at the small end and have a length of 12'. When the logs were cut, they were rolled in the water and each of us would make a raft of 10 logs. The length of time to run these down was uncertain, on account of sweepers, riffles, boulders, etc.—seldom making the voyage without being thrown into the icy [and fast moving] water, and sometimes having to remake the raft. If it were accomplished in 12 hours, we considered we had been lucky.”

Hunter staked what proved to be a rich gold claim on Sulphur Creek. This small creek is southeast of the town of Dawson City and is a tributary to Indian River, just south of King Solomon’s Dome. Dawson City is 2,500 kilometres north of Vancouver. He spent the winter proving the claim until May 1, 1898. In order to assess the value of his claim, Hunter dug a shaft by himself to “a depth of 30 to 40 feet”—the height of a three- to four-storey building.

Hunter advised in the written summary of his life: “To start a shaft which is essential to get to bedrock, the first two feet would be moss, then a glacier deposit under this for a foot or two which would be easy to pick. From that [point] down to bedrock, that would contain gravel or a portion of same. This was permafrost and had to be thawed.”

Thawing the permafrost was accomplished “with a wood fire, first kindling, then dry wood and blanketed with green wood to keep the fire down; about six inches would be thawed with one firing.” Hunter was able to shovel out the gravel and ice mix down to a depth of about 10 feet. For the remaining distance, a ladder, with windlass and bucket, was required to lift out each six-inch thaw.

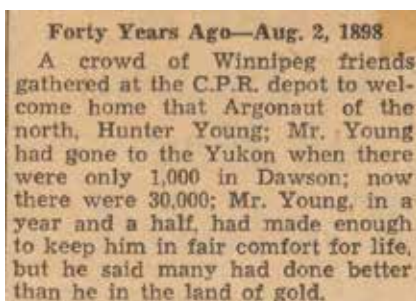
Digging such a long shaft was difficult, repetitive and treacherous. “The days were short, and with so many chores to do it gave little time for Assessment work [which included digging the shaft].” It was only after Hunter reached bedrock that he could collect gravel/rock and wash it to see what gold, if any, his “placer mining claim No. 7 above” on Sulphur Creek might hold.

“Grub” had to be brought to Sulphur Creek from time to time by Hunter on “a loaded sleigh over 65 miles [105 kilometres]” and each trip took “3 or 4 days from Dawson [City]. There were no stopping places or restaurants.”

Hunter sold the Sulphur Creek property in May 1898 for \$30,000, which he received in gold dust at \$17 an ounce in the days before income taxes. This sale price would be the equivalent of roughly \$3.2 million today. He then returned to Winnipeg, travelling through Alaska on the SS *Weir* heading to the mouth of the Yukon River.

Hunter’s claim was still being worked 100 years later. Hunter’s daughter, Barb Sparling, and her family travelled to Sulphur Creek in 1998 to celebrate the success of her dad’s find.

Hunter went back to the Yukon a second time in December 1898. He worked a claim on Hunter Creek for two years and gradually lost all the money he had with him. He then worked as a foreman on Gold Run



Creek for about a year, which allowed him to buy, with five other prospectors, a claim on Clear Creek, about 125 kilometres east, covering a one-mile stretch, which they worked on for more than two years. Hunter quit Clear Creek after he concluded that “the gold was too fine to recover.”

The June 1901 census for the Yukon’s Clear Creek records a 24-year-old Hunter Young as well as many other men from around the world. Hunter earned his passage out of the Yukon cleaning gold dust for the men who purchased his Sulphur Creek claim. He then worked in Seattle in construction until June 1904 in order to buy decent clothes before he returned to Winnipeg.

When Hunter returned from the Yukon in 1904, his brother Philip offered him work with Western Iron Works. This job kept Hunter busy for five years. In 1909, Hunter got a job with the American Land Company selling land in Saskatchewan to Americans, and a year later, he opened his own Winnipeg real estate office.



Birdie Young (Harper)

Around 1909, Hunter Young (33) married Sarah Elizabeth (“Birdie”) Harper (Nugent) (36). Birdie was born on February 17, 1873 in the township of South Fredericksburgh, Ontario. Her parents were Arnold Israel Nugent (a farmer) and Sarah Jane Phippin. Arnold and Sarah had Irish and English ancestry, respectively.

Birdie Nugent first married Thomas James Harper in Winnipeg on October 2, 1895. Thomas and Birdie Harper had four children, all born in Winnipeg: Eleanor Irene Elizabeth Harper (b. July 20, 1896), Edith Lila (“Lena”) Harper (b. February 21, 1898), Muriel May Harper (b. May 29, 1901) and Thomasine Joyce Harper (b. March 8, 1904, just 9 days before her father’s death, and she died September 3, 1905). Thomas Harper died on March 17, 1904.

The 1906 Winnipeg census shows Birdie Harper living with her three young daughters and five boarders. Hunter and Birdie Young’s daughter, Rosina Arabella (“Belle”) Young was born on April 24, 1911. The 1911 St. Boniface census records Hunter and Birdie Young with their four children and a lodger. Today, St. Boniface is on the east side of the Red River, within the City of Winnipeg.

The 1921 Winnipeg census notes that Muriel Harper (18) was living with her mom, Hunter, Belle and Dr. David Young at 494 Camden Place. The census lists both Muriel and Belle as Dr. Young’s granddaughters.

Birdie was an active member of Knox Church for 30 years, after moving to Winnipeg from Emerson, Manitoba. Birdie passed away, at age 57, on September 30, 1930, and is buried with her first husband



Belle Young circa 1918, at age 7

in Winnipeg's Elmwood Cemetery. Their grave monument includes her nickname, Birdie.

Hunter Young, continued

In 1912, Hunter served as a councillor for the newly incorporated municipality of Fort Garry in today's south Winnipeg. In a January 1912 Surrogate Court document, prepared in connection with the estate of his uncle, Peter Reid Young, Hunter swore an affidavit that he was "worth five thousand dollars," net of debts. In 1913, Hunter became the town's reeve and remained in that role until he went overseas in 1916. Hunter purchased a lot in Fort Garry with an existing house that he remodeled. The family lived there, likely for a couple of years, before it burned down the day before Christmas.

In the 1930s, Hunter donated his Fort Garry property (in lieu of taxes) to the municipality. This Fort Garry land in south Winnipeg continues to be used for community recreation as the Wildewood Community Centre.

Hunter Young joined the 79th (also 179th) Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders of Canada (QOCH) and earned the rank of captain before going overseas. Hunter's Officers' Declaration Paper is dated November 1915 and shows his home at 494 Camden Place, his religion as Presbyterian and his occupation as a real estate broker.

His service records, with Library and Archives Canada, show he was with the 43rd Battalion in France at Vimy Ridge, Hill 70 and Passchendaele, where a shell explosion on November 14, 1917 buried him. Initially, he returned to duty, four days after being buried by the explosion, but in December, Hunter was hospitalized. When he was in a London hospital, he suffered an injury from a six-foot fall while walking at night on the hospital grounds. This additional injury, combined with his existing medical issues, resulted in his being declared medically unfit, and he returned to Canada in early 1918.

After the war, Hunter Young secured a position with the Soldiers' Settlement Board making land available to veterans. After his Settlement Board work, Hunter started his own real estate and insurance business that grew to include mining ventures.

With Birdie's death in the fall of 1930, combined with the continuing business slump after the 1929 stock market crash, Hunter spent time in Montreal with his brother Alex and his family. By 1931, mining and real estate were warming up, and Hunter returned to Winnipeg to open an office.

On February 6, 1932, Belle Young (20) married Albert Edward (“Jack”) Grattan (28). Jack was born in Plymouth, England, on June 26, 1903 in the family home at 22 Clarence Street. Plymouth is 400 kilometres west of London. His parents were James John Grattan and Ann Minnie Parnell. Jack’s birth registry notes his father James’ occupation as “cartman.”

At 25 years of age, after working in England as a clerk, Jack sailed on the *SS Megantic* from Southampton to Halifax, in March 1929. The passenger list states that he planned to work as a farmer in Canada. Belle and Jack Grattan had three children: Brian Hunter Grattan (Edmonton, September 14, 1932–1993), Donald Roy Grattan (b. Winnipeg, January 17, 1934) and James Bruce Grattan (b. Vancouver, June 1, 1938).

Belle Grattan (Young) died in Greenwood, British Columbia, on April 29, 1983 and Jack Grattan passed away in Maricopa County, immediately south of Phoenix, Arizona, in November 1991.

Barbara Sparling (Young)

On July 1, 1933, Hunter married a second time to Elsie Crane Gemmel in Selkirk. Elsie was born on February 11, 1895. They had a daughter, Barbara Anne Young, who was born in Winnipeg, on May 15, 1934. Barb Young married Arthur Bambridge Sparling on November 25, 1955. Art was born on January 3, 1930.

Barb and Art Sparling had five Winnipeg-born sons:

- James Young Sparling, b. October 26, 1957
- Paul Douglas Sparling (June 19, 1959—May 31, 2019, Marsh Lake, Yukon)
- Thomas Hunter Sparling, b. March 20, 1962
- David Arthur Sparling (February 19, 1964—March 13, 1977, Winnipeg)
- John Alexander Sparling, b. March 9, 1968

Art Sparling was an associate professor of civil engineering at the University of Manitoba. He received a Bachelor of Science in civil engineering from the University of Manitoba, a Master of Science from the University of Toronto, and a Doctorate in Science in Sanitary Engineering from Washington University. Barb earned a Bachelor of Science in home

economics at the University of Manitoba. Art died, at age 81, on October 30, 2011.

Hunter Young's final years

From 1933 to 1937, Hunter was commander of the QOCH with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. The following 18 years saw Hunter and Elsie Young change their lifestyle to “semi-retirement,” as Hunter later described it, to start a fox ranch, The Bar B Fur Farm, near Camp Morton (Moccasin Beach). The farm was about 10 kilometres north of Gimli, which is on the western shore of Lake Winnipeg and about 100 kilometres north of Winnipeg. They built a unique house for this lakeside property, following a Norwegian design.

In 1955, Hunter and Elsie sold the fox ranch property to the Ukrainian Church Diocese for a park. The couple moved to a house in north Selkirk, on the west bank of the slough for summer use, and enjoyed going south in winter to places like Texas, Arizona, southern California and the beaches on the Gulf of California in Mexico.

Elsie Young died of a heart attack, at age 66, on June 11, 1961, and on August 27, 1965, Hunter Young, at 89, succumbed to melanoma at Deer Lodge Hospital in Winnipeg.



Circa 1943 Moccasin Beach; L-R Back – Major Orr (family friend), Frances Young, Eunice Hopper, Elsie, Hunter & Walter Young, Clark Hopper; Front – Elinor & Barb Young.

Mary Doupe (Young)

David and Rosina Young's daughter, Mary Somerville Young, was born on February 24, 1878 in the family home, Hawthorne Lodge, in Little Britain, Manitoba.

When Mary Young was about nine years of age, in 1887, she received a painting from a Cree artist, James Settee, entitled *Arm River, a Cree Indian Camp Near Fort Benton*. Fort Benton is in Montana, about 160 kilometres south of the Canadian border and 300 kilometres directly south of Medicine Hat, Alberta. In 2015, a family member donated this watercolour to the Royal Ontario Museum.

Mary Young married Joseph (Jacob or Jake) Lonsdale Doupe in St. Andrews, Manitoba, "on a cold" January 3, 1903. The marriage was "in the chapel in the asylum grounds" with her "home only a stone's throw away," Mary wrote years after.

Jacob Doupe was born in Toronto, on September 14, 1867. He was a Dominion land surveyor and held commissions for surveying in each of the four western provinces. Jacob earned a Master of Arts and Engineering degree from St. John's College, University of Manitoba.

Jacob Doupe's parents were Joseph Doupe, a Dominion government surveyor (May 1, 1838 Napanee, Upper Canada—January 30, 1910 Winnipeg) and Ann Eliza Cranston (December 1837 Ireland—April 20, 1928 Winnipeg). Jacob's father was of Irish descent, as noted in the 1891 Winnipeg census. Jacob lived with his parents until his marriage in 1903. In the 1901 census, Jacob and his dad reported earning \$1,200 and \$2,000 a year, respectively.

At the time of the 1911 Winnipeg census, Mary and Jacob Doupe were living with their three oldest children and a domestic. By the time of the 1921 Winnipeg census, Jacob and Mary's family home was 118 Middle Gate Avenue in the Armstrong Point area, a high-income area at the time.

Jacob Doupe retired as chief surveyor for the Canadian Pacific Railway, Western Lines on December 31, 1933, at 66 years of age. At the time of his retirement, the Alberta Land Surveyors' Association recognized his life's work and included comments in their publication about Mr. Doupe, some of which are presented here:

Upon receiving his Manitoba and Dominion Land Surveyor commissions in 1888, he entered private practice for a short



L-R Somerville, Jacob, Mary and Mary (Young) Doupe, circa 1907.

COURTESY OF LISA DOUPE

period of time. In 1889, he was appointed resident engineer with the Northern Pacific and Manitoba Railway and, in 1890, became resident engineer of construction.... He was soon promoted to assistant land commissioner and general town site agent covering Western Canada. From 1912 until his retirement in 1933, he was Chief Surveyor for the Western Lines of the CPR.

Mary and Jacob Doupe had four children:

- Cranston Somerville Doupe (Winnipeg November 4, 1903—Montreal June 24, 1970)
- Mary Simpson Doupe (Banff, Alberta July 19, 1906—Montreal April 11, 1978)
- Joseph Doupe (Winnipeg March 10, 1910—Winnipeg August 26, 1966)
- Clare Lonsdale Doupe (Winnipeg May 11, 1913—Vancouver September 28, 1999)

Some time after her husband passed away, at 84 years of age, in Winnipeg, on February 11, 1952, Mary Doupe (Young) moved to Montreal, to be close to family there. Mary died, at 96 years of age, on March 12, 1974 in Montreal. Mary was buried beside her parents on May 3, 1974 in the Little Britain United Church Cemetery near Lower Fort Garry. Jacob is buried in the St. John's Cathedral Cemetery in downtown Winnipeg.

Cranston Somerville Doupe

Mary and Jacob Doupe's eldest son, Somerville, was also an executive with the CPR, first in Winnipeg, and later, in Montreal. Somerville had his own well-appointed "car" (passenger car) for use on passenger trains, which he used to host dinners and luncheons, including with family members on occasion. Somerville married Frances Gertrude Eastman Chaffey in Winnipeg's St. Luke's Anglican Church on June 10, 1930. Frances was born in Winnipeg, on November 26, 1904, and died in Montreal, on September 29, 1976. Somerville and Frances had two children in Winnipeg:

- John Harward Somerville Doupe, b. October 9, 1932
- Carolyn Mary Somerville Doupe, b. August 27, 1934

Mary Simpson Ferguson (Doupe)

Mary and Jacob Doupe's second child, Mary, married George Victor Ferguson on December 27, 1930 in Manitoba. George was born in Cupar, Fife, Scotland, on April 20, 1897, and passed away, at 79, in Montreal, on January 26, 1977. Cupar is about 50 kilometres north of Edinburgh.

The *Winnipeg Free Press* carried a story about George Ferguson on April 8, 1970 on his retirement, at age 72. The newspaper provides the following:

- At six years of age, George's Scottish missionary father and Irish mother moved to the "backwoods" of British Columbia.
- Later, the family moved to Alberta where George Ferguson attended university.
- George enlisted during World War One and went overseas to Europe in 1916 with the Canadian Mounted Rifles.
- In 1921, as a Rhodes Scholar, George attended Oxford University

and earned a master's degree, after which he worked with *The Times of London*.

- By 1925, George was back in Canada working for the *Winnipeg Free Press*. He became the paper's executive editor by 1944 and, in 1946, he accepted a position with the *Montreal Star*, where he went on to become editor-in-chief.
- The article notes that, at retirement: "Mr. Ferguson still is a formidable presence in one of the largest and brightest of the *Star's* editorial offices."

Mary and George Ferguson had two Winnipeg-born children:

- David Martin Ferguson (June 27, 1933—February 4, 2009 Toronto)
- Stephen Somerville Ferguson, b. October 22, 1939

Joseph Doupe

Mary and Jacob Doupe's third child, Joseph (Joe), was chairman of the Department of Physiology in the Faculty of Medicine at the University of Manitoba. He graduated from this Manitoba faculty as a Doctor of Medicine in 1934, and became a member of the Royal College of Physicians in London in 1936. In 1938, he held a fellowship in medical research at the Banting Institute, University of Toronto.

Joe Doupe served overseas during the Second World War including in France, Egypt and Burma. He took part in the evacuation of 478,000 British and French troops in 1940 at Dunkirk, France. Joe was awarded Professor of the Year at the University of Manitoba, in 1966, by the graduating medical class.

Joe Doupe's wife was Nona Eileen Wright, MD. Nona was born in Kettering, England, on April 9, 1913, and she married Dr. Doupe there on December 22, 1938. Joe and Nona Doupe had three children:

- Sara Marion (Sally) Doupe (December 9, 1942 London, England – June 30, 2000 Winnipeg)
- Joseph David Lonsdale Doupe (August 3, 1944 Edinburgh, Scotland—June 21, 2001 Brisbane, Australia)
- Lisa Mary Doupe, MD, b. July 16, 1946 Winnipeg

Joe and Nona lived at 340 Oxford Street in south Winnipeg for many years. Joe died, at age 56, in the Winnipeg General Hospital on August 27, 1966. Nona passed away twenty years later on January 22, 1986 in Winnipeg, at age 72.

Clare Lonsdale Dudley (Doupe)

Mary and Jacob Doupe’s youngest daughter, Clare, was born on May 11, 1913 in Winnipeg. Clare (22) married James Earl Dudley (26) on November 9, 1935 in Winnipeg’s St. Luke’s Anglican Church. Jim was also born in Winnipeg, on March 13, 1909. He earned a Bachelor of Architecture at the University of Manitoba, and completed a Master in Architecture at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) about 1934. Shortly after Jim completed his education, Clare and Jim married, and moved to Ottawa.

Jim and Clare had six children, and all were born in Ottawa, except their youngest, who was born in Halifax:

- James David Dudley, b. October 15, 1939
- Fergus Gordon Dudley, (April 15, 1941–June 18, 2022 Ladner, B.C.)



Circa 1925: L-R Back—Birdie Young (52), Jacob Doupe (58), David Young (17), Walter Young (45), unknown; Mid—Belle Young (14), Dr. Young (78), Kay Young (14), Frances Young (40); Front—Marge Young (8), Clare Doupe (12) with Hume Young (6), Eileen Young (11).

- James Jordan Dudley, b. November 26, 1942
- Mary Somerville Dudley, b. September 5, 1944
- Jody Lex Dudley, b. October 10, 1946
- Kathleen Clare Dudley, (September 27, 1948—December 6, 2016 Victoria, B.C.)

The Dudley family moved to Vancouver, B.C., in the mid 1950s. Jim and Clare Dudley passed away in Vancouver, on March 15, 1998 and September 28, 1999, respectively. In 2017, their ashes were interred and their names added to the Doupe family monument in the St. John's Cathedral Cemetery in downtown Winnipeg.

Walter Young

Walter Beatty Young and his family are discussed in Chapter 22.

Philip Young

David and Rosina Young's son, Philip Collamer Young, was born in Moore Station, Quebec, on December 16, 1883 and baptised on February 28, 1884. Moore Station is a thirty-minute drive east of downtown Montreal. The baptism was in St. Armand West Anglican Church, Philipsburg, Quebec. Philip Young's baptism sponsors were Anna and Philip Moore. Anna (Annie) Markland Somerville (1842–1912), Rosina's oldest sister, married Philip Collamer Moore, a farmer.

As a teenager, Philip Young was the victim of a gunshot accident. He was hunting and pulled a loaded gun out of a wagon. The gun discharged, hitting his right arm. His father had to amputate the arm. Dr. Young decided there would no more hunting for anyone in the family!

Some time in the first couple of years of the 20th century, Philip



L-R Alex, Walter and Philip Young, 1895.

Young and a partner, Walter Salter, went into business in Winnipeg, selling ornamental iron products made by the Meyers Iron Fence Co. When Philip's brother Hunter returned from the Yukon in 1904, he was invited to join them. Business became so good they decided to open their own plant within their company, Western Iron Works Ltd., and they sold stock to the public. The plant was impressive, Winnipeg was booming and initially, sales went well, but by 1907, the economy was in recession. By 1909, the company was forced into liquidation.

Manitoba's 1901 census shows the 17-year-old Philip Young living with his parents and three of his siblings in Selkirk. By the time of the 1906 census, Philip was living in Winnipeg with his older brother, Hunter. Philip Young (23) married Mary Agnes Tait (23) on April 16, 1907, in Winnipeg. Mary Tait was born in Dalhousie, New Brunswick, on March 29, 1884 and spent at least a few years in Winnipeg, where she attended a convent school. Mary's parents were James Tait and Ada Armstrong.



Philip Young and son Jim, 1908.

In the 1911 census for Sechelt, British Columbia, Philip is listed as working as a full-time clerk for "Howe Sound" (perhaps the local pulp and paper company) and earning \$1,000 a year. Philip and Mary, both 35, were living with their two children, Jim (3) and Alex (1), along with a domestic and a lodger. The town of Sechelt is about 70 kilometres from downtown Vancouver. Like Philip, Mary's heritage is noted as Scottish.

In 1920, Philip Young moved to California, initially by himself. He returned by ship to Victoria, in February 1921. His passenger declaration form records that he was returning home to live with a "relative" at 1318 George Street, Victoria.

In 1922, Philip (38) and the family relocated to California. A July 1922 U.S. government passenger manifest notes that Mary (38) and her three

children, ages four, 12, and 14, were moving from their last “permanent residence” in Vancouver to join Philip at 3608 Kingsley Street, Oakland. Mary’s aunt, Jennie Dewar, of Vancouver is listed as her nearest relative in Canada.

Because he entered the country as a visitor, Philip never did leave the United States again for fear U.S. border agents would not let him back. Nonetheless, several Canadian family members visited and stayed in touch with Philip, Mary and their children throughout their lives.

In the 1930 census, Philip (46) is shown as living in a rented apartment at 9-738 Central Avenue, Alameda City, immediately south of Oakland, California, and working as a real estate agent. There is no listing for Mary. Philip was living with his two children, Mary (12) and Alexander (20) as well as a 72-year-old Dutch nurse, Marie (“Hankie”) Verway, who also immigrated to the U.S. in 1922 with the family.

Throughout the 1930s, the Great Depression was a difficult time for the much of America. Philip and Mary Young were no exception.



L-R Mary Young, Alex Young, Sandra (Young) & Don Pihl, Georgia Young, Philip Young, Berkeley, California, December 21, 1957. COURTESY OF SANDY PIHL

By the time of the 1940 census, Philip (56) and Mary (56) Young were living in a rented home at 753 Juana Avenue, San Leandro. San Leandro is 15 kilometres southwest of central Oakland. Philip's occupation is recorded as a "broker" working for a private business.

In an April 1967 letter, Philip's sister, Mary Doupe (Young), noted that Philip had recently moved into a "nice home" where he was "well cared for and reasonably happy" and his wife, Mary, was still in hospital. Mary passed away, at 85 years of age, on February 3, 1970, and Philip died, at age 90, on October 2, 1974. Both died in Alameda, California. Sandy Pihl (Young) has advised that her grandparents, Philip and Mary Young, provided her with a great deal of love and kindness throughout their lives.

Philip and Mary had three children: James Fredrick Young, Alexander Macnider Young and Mary Campbell Young.

Jim Young

Philip and Mary Young's eldest son, Jim, was born in Winnipeg on July 17, 1908. He died in Carpinteria, California, at 20 years of age, on January 6, 1929, and is buried in Santa Barbara. Jim was an aviator, and flew at times for the motion picture industry. He is understood to have died after parachuting from a plane, being blown over the ocean and drowning. Carpinteria is on the ocean between Los Angeles and Santa Barbara.

Alex and Georgia (Gray) Young

Philip and Mary Young's son, Alexander, was born in British Columbia on February 28, 1910. Alex Young (23) married Georgia Luceil Gray (20) in Santa Cruz, California, on September 7, 1934. Georgia was born on April 7, 1913 in Brocket, North Dakota, and was the youngest of eleven children.

Alex or Alec became a U.S. citizen on June 1, 1936. Alex was known within his immediate family simply as Al. Alex and Georgia had two children. Their daughter, Sandra Luanne (Sandy) Young, was born on December 7, 1935 in San Francisco. Their son, Craig Alexander Young, died the day he was born on August 10, 1950.

By April 1940, Alex and Georgia Young were living with their four-year-old daughter at 65 Buena Vista Terrace in San Francisco. Alex graduated from Stanford University in Palo Alto. After graduation, and except for his military service, he worked for many years for the Crocker Estate Company

in San Francisco in investments, building and land management. Alex Young enlisted in the U.S. Navy on April 5, 1944 and was discharged on February 2, 1946. Alex eventually worked throughout California as an independent, industrial real estate advisor.

Georgia Young worked as an administrative assistant for a stockbroker and, later, in the San Francisco public school system. She was also a licensed realtor.

Al and Georgia Young lived nearly all their lives in San Francisco and nearby Santa Cruz, California. Alex and his sister, Mary Essex (Young), and their families were very close and enjoyed getting together often, including to celebrate birthdays and special holidays.

Alex Young enjoyed tennis and golf, but his passion was sailing and racing boats in San Francisco Bay. He owned two boats, and with the help of his “crew” (his wife, daughter and brother-in-law, Eric Essex), won several club championships.

Alex Young passed away on September 4, 1999, at age 89, and Georgia died, at 96 years of age, on July 11, 2009. Both died in Rochester, Michigan and are buried in Colma, part of greater San Francisco. Alex and Georgia Young had moved to Michigan in 1997 for their final years to be close to their daughter and her family.

Mary Essex (Young)

Philip and Mary Young’s daughter, Mary, was born in British Columbia on March 22, 1918. Mary Young (21) married Eric Herbert Essex (24) on February 22, 1940 in San Francisco. Eric was born on April 25, 1915 in Grass Valley, California. Eric’s parents were Gerald Knight Essex and Loraine Bille Twitchell. Mary became a U.S. citizen on September 29, 1941.

Eric Essex enrolled in the architecture program at the University of California at Berkeley in the mid-1930s, but the financial pressures of the Great Depression caused him to leave university after completing two years.

The 1940 census for Alameda shows Eric was working on a full-time basis as a building maintenance contractor, and Mary was working as a secretary. This census shows the newlyweds living at 991 Park Street, with Eric’s divorced mother, Loriane (55), who was working as a piano teacher.

Due to poor eyesight, Eric Essex was not able to enlist during the Second World War but worked in the Richmond shipyards near San Francisco,

building landing craft for the Navy. For a few years after the war, he worked in construction for Stolte Construction Inc. on large state water projects, before returning to architecture.

Eric Essex apprenticed as an architectural student and, about 1955, he became a licensed architect in California. He started his own architectural firm in the early 1960s. In 1973, he began work as a campus architect at the University of California, Santa Cruz, where he remained until he was 70 in 1985. Eric was a keen outdoorsman who loved sailing.

Mary Essex was an active volunteer for non-profit organizations. She served as president of the Alameda Council for Girl Scouts of America and president of Alameda's Auxiliary Branch of Oakland's Children's Hospital. In 1968, Mary became a licensed real estate broker and sold real estate until her retirement 20 years later.

Eric and Mary Essex had three children: Joan Erica (b. April 25, 1945 in Berkeley), Margery Anne (Marty) (b. January 8, 1947 in Berkeley) and Cheryl Marie (Cherie) (b. November 30, 1951 in Madera, CA).

Mary Essex passed away, at age 74, on October 23, 1992 in San Bernardino. In 1995, Eric married Kathleen Sheffield. Eric Essex died, at 91 years of age, on January 9, 2007 in San Bernardino.

Alexander Young

Dr. David and Rosina Young's youngest son, Alexander Arthur Young, was born on January 3, 1886, in the family home, Hawthorne Lodge. In the 1906 census for the town of Selkirk, Manitoba, Alex (20) is listed as the only child still living at home with his parents.

Alex graduated from McGill University in Montreal in 1910 with a Bachelor of Science, with a specialty in civil engineering. Alex provided a quotation for use beside his photo in the 1910 McGill yearbook: "Who does not love wine, women and song, Remains a fool his whole life long." Alex was a member of McGill's water polo team and the university's swim club executive.

Shortly after graduation, Alex went into business with a partner, Frank Scott Fowler, under the name "Fowler & Young." In 1923, this name was changed to Nelson River Construction, a company that continues to this day. Fowler, originally from Winnipeg, also obtained his Bachelor of Science from McGill University in 1910. In 1923, Alex Young served as president of The

Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of Manitoba, founded in 1920.

Fowler & Young's first project was to build two houses on Camden Place in Winnipeg, which were purchased by Alex's brothers, Hunter and Walter. The company then moved into commercial construction. In 1913, as an example, Fowler & Young built the first concrete road (Fort Garry Drive) in western Canada, for the municipality of Fort Garry (now part of Winnipeg), according to Hunter Young's memoir. Hunter's daughter, Barb Sparling, has advised that another Fowler & Young project was the Elm Park Bridge (or The Ice Cream Bridge) that was built in 1912 and remains in use today for pedestrians.

Alex Young married Emily Marguerite (Rita) Dowler in Winnipeg on January 9, 1915, according to the Manitoba Government's marriage records. Curiously, Alex's January 1914 military "Attestation Paper," with Library and Archives Canada, shows he was married and living with his wife at 143 Canora Street. This was also Alex and Rita Young's home at the time of the 1916 Winnipeg census.

Canora Street is in the popular West End residential neighbourhood of the day and just a few streets from other Young family members. Living with them at the time of the 1916 census were Rita's mom, Jane Dowler (66) and Rita's immediate older sister, Elsie Dowler (25; b. May 6, 1886). Jane's husband, Frank, had died in January 1911 in Guelph, Ontario. Guelph is 100 kilometres west of Toronto.

Rita Dowler was born in Guelph on January 15, 1889. Rita was the youngest child of Frank Dowler, a merchant, and Jane (or Jennie) Davis (b. July 11, 1850). Frank was born on either November 28, 1846 or November 4, 1848. He died in Guelph on January 23, 1911. Frank and Jennie Dowler were both born in Ireland and immigrated to Canada in 1868 and 1866, respectively.

The 1891 and 1901 censuses show the Dowler family living in Guelph, Ontario. Frank's oldest son, Robert, was born in May 1868 in Ireland. The 1901 census form records that Jennie immigrated to Canada, at 16 years of age, in 1866. Also, Robert did not immigrate to Canada until he was 15, in 1883, by which time Frank and Jennie Dowler had had at least two children born in Canada. It is likely that Robert's mother was not Jennie.

Alex Young served in the 27th Battalion (City of Winnipeg), an infantry



Rita Dowler and Alex Young, circa 1916. COURTESY OF SUSAN DRAKE

battalion, during the First World War. The battalion fought as part of the 6th Infantry Brigade of the Second Canadian Division, in France and Flanders, until the end of the war. Alex belonged to the 79th Cameron Highlanders of Canada in Winnipeg before volunteering, in 1916, to serve overseas in the Canadian Expeditionary Force. He was a captain in October 1916, and had achieved the rank of major by the end of the war. Alex also served overseas during the Second World War.

Alex and Rita had one child, Margaret Anne Somerville Young, born in Winnipeg on May 4, 1917. Alex resumed his work in Winnipeg with Fowler & Young after the war. The 1921 Winnipeg census shows Alex, Rita,

their four-year-old daughter Margaret and a domestic living at 73 Riverwood Avenue in Fort Garry in south Winnipeg.

Around 1927, Alex and his family moved to Toronto where he established a successful construction business. Information available from Alex's brother, Hunter, states that Alex and his family relocated to Montreal around 1930 for a major construction contract. The Young family remained in Montreal, living in Westmount, until 1935.

After several years of escalating medical distress, Rita was placed in the Homewood Sanitarium in June 1935 in her hometown of Guelph. Her doctor stated, in her "certificate of registration of death" that she died, at 48 years of age, on September 5, 1938 of repeated convulsions caused by hardening of the cerebral arteries (sclerosis), persistent high blood pressure and melancholy. This certificate was completed with information provided by Alex and states that her last permanent address was Montreal. Rita is buried in Guelph's Woodlawn Memorial Park.

Alex lived in Grimsby Beach, Ontario, from 1935 until at least 1940, when his daughter married there. Grimsby Beach is about 80 kilometres southeast of Guelph. Two granddaughters have advised that Alex Young worked on sewer/water construction projects in Crystal Beach, near Fort Erie and Niagara Falls, both of which are within 65 kilometres of Grimsby.

On October 10, 1938, Alex Young married Bertha Violet Crombie in St. Catharines, Ontario. Bertha was born in Toronto in June 1902, and passed away in Victoria in January 1992. She had two children—David and Christopher Crombie—during her first marriage. Bertha's parents were Charles Walker and Violet Lucy Montizambert.

In January 1947, Alex (61) and Bertha (40) Young crossed the border at Niagara Falls heading to Daytona Beach, Florida, for four months, according to a U.S. border manifest. At this time, the couple's home was 477 Bayview Avenue, Toronto.

Later in life, Alex and Bertha moved to the west coast. While they lived in an apartment, they built a lovely home at 2614 Queenswood Drive, near Telegraph Bay, about 10 kilometres east of downtown Victoria. They also maintained an apartment at 1430 Newport Avenue in the Oak Bay neighbourhood of Victoria. Alex Young died of throat cancer, at age 81, on May 7, 1967, and is buried in Victoria.

Margaret Drake (Young)

After graduating from high school about 1934 in Westmount, Quebec, Marg completed an executive secretary program in Boston, Massachusetts. She then returned to Montreal to work. Marg lived in a boarding house, and met a very shy fellow boarder there named John Drake.

On January 27, 1940, Alex and Rita's daughter Marg Young (22) married John Stuart Drake (23) in the St. Andrew's Anglican Church in Grimsby, where her father was living. John Drake was born in Montreal on April 18, 1916, and had an older brother, Thomas Stuart Drake and younger sister, Frances Marion Drake.

John's parents were Leslie Lynd Drake (b. January 7, 1880 Montreal) and Inez Stuart who married in Montreal's Anglican Christ Church Cathedral on September 18, 1912. Leslie received his early education in St. Catharines. Leslie Drake's parents were Thomas C. and Sarah M. (Lynd) Drake. Leslie Drake was an officer and executive of several of Canada's leading business and industrial enterprises. Inez Stuart's father was A.P. Stuart of Montreal. Inez Stuart was born in Manitoba around 1881, and her parents were born in England, according to the 1921 census for Westmount, Quebec. Leslie and Inez Drake's family home was 130 Macgregor Street, Montreal.

Inez Drake died in Montreal on January 29, 1927, at about 46 years of age. Two of his grandchildren have advised that Leslie Drake never recovered emotionally from his wife's early death. He never remarried. In November 1935, in the midst of the Great Depression, Leslie Drake returned from an overseas trip on the Empress of Britain travelling from Southampton, England, to Quebec City. Leslie Drake died, at age 65, in St. Catharines on September 12, 1945.

After initially living in Montreal when they were first married, Margaret and John Drake moved to Toronto and lived in an apartment at 1477 Bayview Avenue. John enlisted during the Second World War but was unable to go overseas due to poor hearing. About 1945, they moved again to St. Catharines and lived at 140 Highland Avenue. About 1947 or 1948, they relocated to Mount Royal in Montreal for two years. Around 1950, the family travelled back to St. Catharines, and eventually, moved into their long-time home at 28 Ridgewood Road.

In the 1960s, John qualified as a registered industrial accountant, later renamed certified management accountant. He worked for his father's



July 1957 Lower Fort Garry, L-R Hunter, Mary, Walter and Alex Young.

business that was acquired by an American company. After working as an executive secretary with a variety of companies, Marg became a court reporter with the Juvenile Court. At the age of 69 in 1986, she graduated with a Bachelor of Arts (Hons) from Brock University.

Marg and John enjoyed being active. They played golf, participated in a hiking club, skied and were keen bridge players. Marg was a regular volunteer at the YWCA/YMCA. Marg and John had three children:

- Susan Margaret Drake, b. Toronto October 24, 1944
- David Alexander Drake, b. St. Catharines August 15, 1946
- Mary Anne Drake, b. St. Catharines May 26, 1953

After years of struggling with dementia, Marg died, at age 77, in her St. Catharines home on September 4, 1994 with her family at her side. After breaking his hip and then contracting pneumonia, John passed away, at 86 years of age, on January 2, 2003 in a St. Catharines hospital with his daughters present.

Later in life, when siblings Hunter, Mary, Walter and Alex would be together, they would spend time retelling and laughing at some of the stories of their youth. Often they would enjoy speaking to each other at these times in Red River's unique Bungie dialect (also Bungi, Bungee). Bungie is a combination of Cree, Gaelic and Scots-English.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. David Young married Rosina Somerville
2. Walter Young married Frances Flett
3. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
4. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
5. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
6. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

James Sutherland and Jane Flett

My fourth great-grandfather James Sutherland was born in Caithness, Scotland, according to his 1835 will. Caithness County is the northernmost county of mainland Scotland, immediately below Orkney.

Sutherland first came to the “Northwest” (now western Canada) at 20 years of age, in 1797, to work for the English-owned Hudson’s Bay Company (HBC). To put this in context, Sutherland arrived in northern Canada only five years after Captain George Vancouver surveyed the coastal area of the Canadian city that bears his name. James Sutherland remained in the Northwest for the rest of his life. He married Jane Flett, and they had nine children who were born between about 1800 and 1824. Information about his wife and their children is provided later in this chapter.

As an aside, Frances Backhouse recorded a 1797 discovery in her book, *Once They Were Hats: In Search of the Mighty Beaver*. Ms. Backhouse reported that the same year that James Sutherland arrived in North America, the explorer David Thompson observed a very large beaver dam during his travels across the Canadian prairies. This dam was 1.6 kilometres long and “wide enough for his horses to walk two abreast.”

James Sutherland grew up on Knockhall Farm in Orkney, where his father, George, was a tenant farmer. George Sutherland had two brothers who were killed in the Battle of Waterloo, on June 18, 1815. Knockhall Farm

continues today and is located close to the small port town of St. Margaret's Hope, at the north end of South Ronaldsay, Orkney.

Orkney is an archipelago of about 70 islands. It is 16 kilometres off the northeast coast of Scotland. About 20 of its islands are inhabited. Orkney includes Neolithic sites, tall sandstone cliffs and seal colonies but has very few trees. Important 5,000-year-old Neolithic properties include Skara Brae, the Ness of Brodgar and the Standing Stones of Stenness. These UNESCO World Heritage Sites are in the Mainland, the largest island.

Orkney's administrative centre is the 9,000-person town of Kirkwall. Agriculture is the most important sector of the economy. The islands have been inhabited for at least 8,500 years. Orkney was invaded and forcibly annexed to Norway in 875 and settled by the Norse. The Scottish Parliament re-annexed the Islands in 1472. The total population of Orkney today is 21,000.

James Sutherland's family

Handwritten pages of the family register for the Sutherlands of "Knockhall, South Ronaldshay, Orkney Islands, Scotland" give us information on James' immediate family. The family register documents that James' father, George, was born in Caithness County and "died on June 12, 1831, at aged 91 years, at Knockhall, South Ronaldshay." George Sutherland is buried on the east side of St. Peter's Churchyard in South Ronaldsay.

An 1821 census for Knockhall Farm records George Sutherland as 79 and his wife Ann as 48 years of age, implying birth years of 1742 and 1773, respectively. A 1742 birth year suggests George was 89 years old when he died.

My fifth great-grandfather George Sutherland had three wives over his lifetime. James was a product of the first marriage. James' mother's name is not provided in the family register. There have been guesses by others about who she was, but I can find nothing definite. The register notes that George and his first wife had two children—Catherin and James. Both children are reported in the register to have been born in Mey, parish of Canisbay, in Caithness County, in 1776 and on June 23, 1777, respectively. Catherin died on October 30, 1794, at 18 years of age.

Some time after his first wife died, George Sutherland married a second time to Wilhamina ("Minne") McBeath of Burwick, South Ronaldsay. Minne

was born around 1754, and passed away, at age 59, on August 7, 1813. She too is buried in the St. Peter's Churchyard.

George Sutherland and Minne McBeath had one child, John, born at Knockhall Farm. The family register records that John was born on December 28, 1795. The Church of Scotland's records show John was baptised a year later on December 27, 1796. The family register for John's birth date appears incorrect. The Church record reads, in part: "Baptized John lawful son of George Sutherland and Minne McBeath in Knockhall, St. Margaret's Hope."

John Sutherland was less than a year old when his brother, James (20), left Orkney, in 1797, to work in British North America for the Hudson's Bay Company. Throughout this book, John is referred to as a brother but is actually a half brother to James.

John Sutherland married Jane Allan and they raised nine children who were born between 1820 and 1836. Their 1818 Church of Scotland marriage record states: "John Sutherland at point was married to Jane Allan, March Nineteenth." In his August 10, 1840 letter to his brother, James Sutherland expressed his "great grief" on learning of the death earlier in the year of John's wife, whom James "esteemed" as a sister.

George Sutherland married a third time to Anne (also Ann) Manson on March 19, 1816 in the parish of South Ronaldsay and Burray, according to the Church of Scotland's records. The 1816 parish record notes: "March Nineteenth George Sutherland of Quoys and Garth was married to Anne Manson from Canisbay. John Sutherland and James Manson witnesses." Garth and Quoys are near Knockhall Farm.

The 1851 Scottish census lists John Sutherland as 55 years old, and living at Knockhall Farm, with six of his children ranging in age from 13 to 27 years, as well as five others, likely domestics and labourers. Knockhall Farm is reported in the census to be 84 acres and employ five labourers.

John Sutherland's second wife was Harriet (Henrietta) Moodie Sutherland. The Church of Scotland's 1853 records state: "John son of George Sutherland and William-mina McBeath his wife was married to Harriet daughter of Donald Sutherland, Farmer in Walls and his wife Anne Lowe Twenty-third of August." South Walls is an island in Orkney.

John Sutherland died at Knockhall Farm on May 16, 1856, at 59 years of age.

James Sutherland (1777–1844), continued

The Glenbow Museum in Calgary has digitized correspondence of James Sutherland and some family members dating from 1814 to 1857. Sutherland and Clouston family correspondence quoted in this book was obtained from Glenbow Museum documents, unless otherwise noted. Dr. Ernest Marwick, an Orkney historian, wrote an article in 1966 about James Sutherland, based on these letters, that appeared in *The Beaver* (now *Canada's History*) magazine. Before this article appeared, little was known of this James Sutherland.

In an August 8, 1831 letter to his younger brother, John, in Orkney, James Sutherland attributed their ability to read and write to their dad. Sutherland wrote, “the Power to impress on a blank sheet of Paper our Hopes and fears our Ideas and Sentiments. In fact, it enables us to hold conversation with friends Millions of miles from us; and you and I ought to be particularly grateful to our maker and not forgetful that we are greatly indebted to our earthly Parent for enabling us to possess that Power, many with more ample means than he has, neglected giving their children that instruction that he gave us.” All of James Sutherland’s sons were literate.

Normally, brothers James and John Sutherland could write to each other once a year. In the early 1800s, typically, letters arrived in Rupert’s Land in summer, after the ice cleared on Hudson Bay in June, and outgoing letters



Knockhall Farm, St. Margaret’s Hope, South Ronaldsay, Orkney, Scotland, in 2008.

often left with the final sailing, no later than “early September, in time to clear Hudson Strait before it became too dangerous [from ice floes],” as Stephen Bown noted in his book, *The Company: the Rise and Fall of the Hudson’s Bay Empire*.

The information provided below on Sutherland’s career was obtained from Hudson’s Bay Company Archives’ documents.

Sutherland was able to begin his career with the HBC as a “writer.” Most young men from Orkney who joined the HBC, did so as illiterate workers and remained in manual labour positions for as long as they worked for the company.

J.S. Clouston wrote an article for the December 1936 issue of *The Beaver*. In this article, Clouston noted that the secretary of the Hudson’s Bay Company in London had informed him that, in 1799, 416 of the 530 personnel (or 78%) employed in the North American fur trade were Orcadians.

King Charles’ 1670 charter granted “the Governor and the Company of Adventurers trading into Hudson Bay”—that is, the Hudson’s Bay Company exclusive authority over all the lands of the Hudson Bay watershed. The Hudson’s Bay Company is one of the world’s oldest chartered companies.

Sutherland started as a “writer” in York Factory in 1797, and then moved inland to the York district to serve as a writer from 1798 to 1803. York Factory was, for many years, the most important Hudson’s Bay Company trading post, located on the west bank at the mouth of the Hayes River. York Factory is about 200 kilometres southeast along the shores of Hudson Bay from today’s Churchill, Manitoba. For two hundred years, all HBC cargo and people regularly arrived from Britain and left from York Factory to return to Britain. York Factory was established in 1684.



Rupert’s Land. IMAGE COURTESY OF WIKIMEDIA ATLAS

From 1803 to 1805, James worked as a “writer-in-charge” at Cumberland House, which is located in what is now northeast Saskatchewan, approximately ninety kilometres west of modern day The Pas, Manitoba.

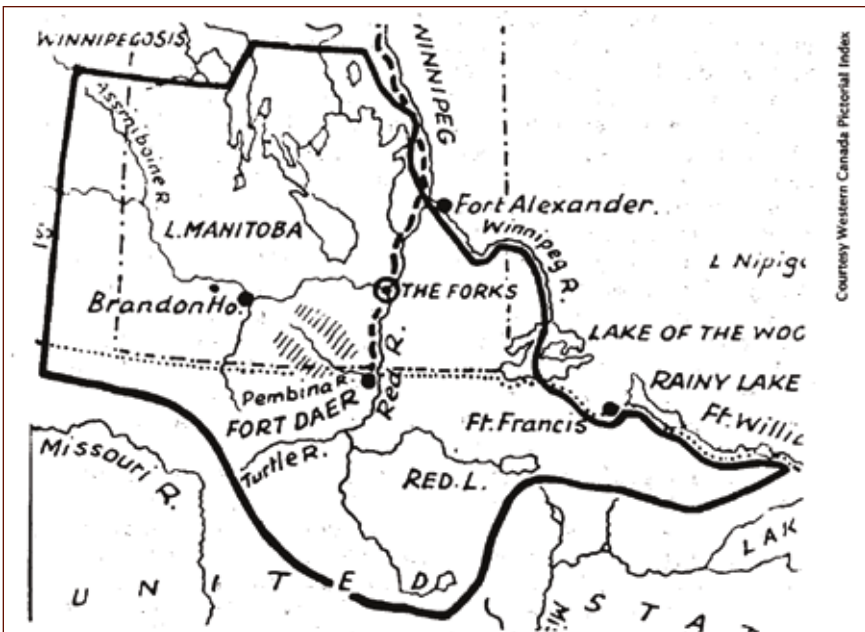
Sutherland next worked at Green Lake on the English River in northwest Saskatchewan, as “writer-in-charge”

during 1805–06. After that year, he served once again as a “writer” in the York district from 1806 to 1808.

In 1808, James was promoted to “trader and master” at Cumberland House, where he remained for three years, until 1811, at which time he assumed these same responsibilities of trader and master for the Winnipeg district until 1813.

In the early fall of 1813, James Sutherland sailed on the *Prince of Wales* from York Factory to Britain. In mid-May, he returned via Lower Canada on the *Nancy* to Quebec City, and from there by coach to Montreal over four days, where he arrived at the end of June 1814. Sutherland then had a canoe built, hired three Canadian voyageurs and set out on a 25–30 day trip from Montreal to Moose Factory. Moose Factory is on the Moose River in today’s northeastern Ontario, at the south end of James Bay.

When he went home to Orkney in 1813, he took his son William (7) with him so he could “get a little education,” as Sutherland put it in a June 29, 1814 letter from Montreal to his own father, George. In this letter, he expressed regret about leaving his son in Orkney and said he was feeling “a great deal of anxiety” over that decision. William stayed in



Land granted to Lord Selkirk in 1811, in relation to Manitoba’s present boundaries. COURTESY ARCHIVES OF MANITOBA, MAPS, 2 (N28807)

Orkney for nine years before his father was able to go overseas again and bring him home.

Sutherland very much liked the people he met in Lower Canada, in the communities of Quebec City and Montreal, as well as in the countryside in between: "I could certainly settle here, but I cannot resolve to abandon my children." It was not uncommon, in Sutherland's time, for HBC employees to take a "country wife" (First Nation) while they worked in Rupert's Land, and later, leave her and any children when they retired from the HBC, to start a new life with a European wife either in Canada or Britain.

After initially being assigned to Moose Factory in early 1814, Sutherland was placed in charge of the East and West Winnipeg district at Jack River House later that year. Jack River House was a forerunner of Norway House. Norway House is 460 kilometres north of Winnipeg, immediately above the north end of Lake Winnipeg, and close to the geographic centre of Manitoba today.

On June 1, 1815, Sutherland submitted a lengthy, handwritten report on Jack River House addressed to Mr. Thomas Thomas, governor of the Northern district of the Hudson's Bay Company. By 1815, Jack River House had been in operation for several years, but continued to lose money for the Company. The report detailed what was known of the local people, vegetation, animals, rivers, lakes and the post's staff. Sutherland was clearly not optimistic about its future. The report no doubt played a direct role in moving this post to Norway House.

1815 to 1816 saw Sutherland take charge of West Winnipeg district at Qu'Appelle on the Qu'Appelle River, near the Saskatchewan-Manitoba border. It was at this time, on May 8, 1816, when Sutherland and more than 20 other HBC men were attacked by a party of North West Company (NWC) men under Cuthbert Grant, and taken prisoner at a NWC post for a brief time. Details of this attack are provided in Chapter 1.

For the next three years (1816 to 1819), James Sutherland was in charge of the Swan River district, Fort Hibernia and the Forks at Red River, each for one year. Fort Hibernia is in the Swan River district. Swan River is located in west-central Manitoba, near what is today the Manitoba-Saskatchewan provincial border.

From 1819 to 1821, Sutherland was in charge of the Swan River trading post. With the merger of the North West Company and the Hudson's Bay

Company agreed to on March 26, 1821, when Sutherland was age 43, he was promoted that year to chief factor, the highest level available in the company, as a “commissioned officer.” In this role, he shared in the profits of the company. In 1821, he was assigned as chief factor-in-charge of the Saskatchewan district, based at Fort Edmonton. Sutherland’s promotion came at a time when many trading posts were being closed to avoid duplication, and administrative positions eliminated, as a result of the merger, which meant many employees were terminated. *The Little Emperor*, a book authored by John S. Galbraith, notes that “At the time of the coalition [in 1821], there were 1,983 employees of the [Hudson’s Bay] Company. During the next four years, this number was reduced to 827.”

The minutes of the annual meeting of the northern department of the HBC (maintained by the Hudson’s Bay Company Archives) for July 1821 record Sutherland’s appointment. President Nicholas Garry, Governor George Simpson, and eleven other chief factors were in attendance, which was typical of the size of the senior management team at these important annual meetings. The northern department included all the territory and forts west and north of Fort William (now Thunder Bay in northwest Ontario). Sutherland was the only chief factor appointment that year in the northern department. In 1821, there were 25 chief factors, including Sutherland, in the HBC from Quebec to the Pacific and the Arctic after amalgamation, as noted by George Bryce in his book, *The Remarkable History of the Hudson’s Bay Company*.

In 1822, poor health caused James to take a leave of absence and travel to England. Sutherland returned to Rupert’s Land the following year with his son William, then 16, who had been in Orkney since he was seven years old. James resumed his duties as chief factor at Fort Severn, which is located on Hudson Bay. Fort Severn is the most northwestern community of today’s Ontario. He stayed at Fort Severn from 1823 to 1825.

In an August 26, 1825 letter, James said he had been “reduced to a mere skeleton & scarcely able to walk, most Part of the time confined to bed” and “[He felt] unfit for active service.” Throughout 1825 and 1826, James was very concerned that he would die due to failing health.

As described later in this chapter, in 1825, his eldest daughter, Sally, her husband, Roderick McKenzie, and their children moved to Canada (between Quebec City and Montreal). McKenzie continued to work for the HBC.

HBC's (Upper) Fort Garry's daily journal states that James Sutherland came "from York Factory with his family on October 14, 1825, to spend the winter on a leave of absence due to poor health The Sutherlands were lodging in new Fort Douglas [in Winnipeg]." On June 13, 1826, the journal notes that "Sutherland and family set out for Norway House, health improved but little." The largest Red River flood recorded in Manitoba history occurred in April 1826, according to the Manitoba Floodway Authority.

In 1826, Sutherland again took a leave of absence for the benefit of obtaining medical advice. He sailed to Britain on the *Prince of Wales* in the fall and took his son William with him. While he was in London, James saw "several imminent physicians" and they "all agree that a Change of Objects, Air and Company with amusement is likely to do me more good than all the Medicines in the Doctors Shop."

After spending some time in London, Sutherland reported that he felt better from exercise and a change of scenery. He met with his brother, John, in Edinburgh, and then on March 15, 1827, he and son Bill (who met him coming back from Orkney) left Liverpool on a 42-day voyage to New York. His trip from New York to present day Manitoba began with a steamboat for 250 kilometres, then by coach to Albany, then again by steamboat for 200 kilometres, and finally back on a coach to Montreal.

As all the HBC canoes had departed from Montreal, Sutherland needed to hire five Canadian voyageurs and a canoe for £150; the total trip from NYC to Manitoba lasted 62 days in the spring of 1827. He officially retired, at 49 years of age, on June 1 that year, after working for the Hudson's Bay Company for thirty years. In total, the trip from London to Norway House cost him "£200 & upwards," a cost he greatly begrudged.

His family was living in Norway House when he returned to the Northwest in 1827. The family may have chosen to live in Norway House during Sutherland's trip to Britain to be closer to his wife's family. His son-in-law Roderick McKenzie, daughter Sally and their children were based at the HBC Portneuf post, east of Montreal, in 1827.

To put £200 in 1827 into perspective today, this cost was incurred at a time when a general labourer earned roughly £17 for a whole year's work with the HBC. Researcher Philip Goldring stated that "generally just above half the [Hudson's Bay Company] workforce below a clerk's rank consisted of labourers or common boatmen [middlemen] earning the minimum annual



Voyageurs (men who travel by canoe) in the 1800s on Lake Superior transporting beaver & other pelts in large birch bark canoes. "CANOES IN A FOG, LAKE SUPERIOR, 1869", 1869, OIL ON CANVAS, COLLECTION OF GLENBOW MUSEUM, CALGARY, CANADA, 55.8.1

wage of £15 – £17 from 1821 to 1858 and £22 thereafter.” These wages are consistent with the HBC employment contracts from the early 1800s that I examined in the Kirkwall Public Library in Orkney.

Robert Coutts, a Parks Canada historian, noted that the Company granted Sutherland on retirement, two lots (96 and 97) near the Rapids at St. Andrews (now Lockport, which is about 30 kilometres north of Winnipeg) and he settled down with his family to a new life as a farmer. Register B which lists the “Grantees of Lands in Assiniboia under the Earl of Selkirk and the Hudson’s Bay Company, from 1812 to July 15, 1870” records James Sutherland as owning lots #96, 164 and 514, and his eldest son, William, as owning lots #97, 504 and 631.

It is difficult, in a 21st-century context, to fully appreciate the hardships James Sutherland and his family endured as “normal” for the thirty years that he worked for the HBC. Based on his final wealth, which is discussed later, he was well rewarded financially, but James certainly worked under very challenging circumstances, including a harsh climate; at times “the incessant torment of Musquitoes [*sic*];” a lack of law enforcement and protection; and long distances which were travelled with small boats, canoes, wagons, sleds, and on foot.

Sutherland was a Justice of the Peace by 1835. He became a councillor of Assiniboia (Manitoba) in 1839 when this council was first established, with Sir George Simpson, governor of Rupert’s Land, serving as council president.

In an August 10, 1828 letter, Sutherland expressed to his brother, John, how he was feeling after just one year of living in the Red River Settlement; “during the winter my health was better than it has been for several years Past and since the commencement of Summer, I have recovered so much strength of both body and mind that it astonishes every one, and no one more than myself. . . . I attribute this to nothing but the suitability of the Climate of this Place, and the constant employment and exercise I have taken ever since I arrived here.” He also noted that he had been dashing about with his horse and carriage after he had a “good house built.”

Jane Flett (circa 1785–1835)

James Sutherland would have met Jane Flett not long after he arrived to work for the HBC in the summer of 1797. During his first few years in British

North America, James worked in York Factory on the shores of Hudson Bay and in the surrounding York district of today's northern Manitoba.

Sutherland and Flett first married following Native custom of his taking a "country wife" or marriage à la façon du pays. Their marriage would have occurred around 1799, before their first child was born. There was not a member of the clergy in the Northwest before 1820 to conduct marriages. The couple was married on May 20, 1828 by David Jones, chaplain for the Hudson's Bay Company in the Red River Settlement. Reverend Jones was a minister with the Anglican Church.

There have been unsupported guesses by others as to who Jane Flett's parents were. I have not been able to identify Jane's parents or to find a record of her birth, although she is believed to have been born circa 1785. Jane remains somewhat of a mystery. Nonetheless, we know that two of James and Jane Sutherland's daughters, Letitia and Elizabeth, swore in their 1875 scrip applications that their mother was an "Indian." Letitia's affidavit also states that her mother's name was Jane Flett. In addition, the August 12, 1821 baptism page for seven of the Sutherland children states, for each child, that the father was James Sutherland and that their mother was an "Indian" (no name is provided). The HBC employment record for Roderick McKenzie, James and Jane Sutherland's son-in-law, states that his wife, Sally, was the "daughter of James Sutherland and an Indian Woman." The source for this point in Roderick Sutherland's work record may have been the August 12, 1821 baptism record.

Jane was almost certainly Ininew or Cree and, specifically, Ininimowin or Swampy Cree. In the first half of the 19th century, after clergy first arrived in the Northwest in 1820, Chloe Clark, the genealogist for The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert's Land has advised that: "missionaries often gave an English name to a First Nations person they baptised," although Jane Flett's baptism record has been lost. I don't know Jane's Indigenous name.

Swampy Cree are those Cree who live on swampy land, including the area that is today's northern Manitoba. Other Cree include Plains Cree, Woods Cree and Rock Cree. Swampy Cree are described in Isaac Cowie's book, *The Company of Adventurers* (published in 1913), by Sir George Simpson (1787–1860), governor-in-chief of Rupert's Land. Cowie said Simpson knew every tribe in the territory and described Swampy Cree as "people of the most comely appearance and most amenable to civilization

of all nations.” Webster’s dictionary defines comely as “pleasant to look at; attractive; fair.”

James entrusted his wife with the only copy of his last will and testament. In his October 10, 1826 letter to his brother, John, written while he was on the *Prince of Wales*, near Land’s End, England, James referred to his wife on this single occasion, in all the correspondence we have from James. It is an important reference. James was returning on this occasion to Britain for medical help. He stated that: “It has been the Will of God to spare my life to reach this far but in a very low station my sufferings in the body has [*sic*] been great.” Sutherland went on to say: “I have to inform you that I have made no alteration in my will since I wrote you last and that said will is lodged in the hands of my Wife in Hudson Bay so nothing can be done respecting my Property until that will appears.”

Almost certainly everyone in the Sutherland family spoke Cree. The most tangible evidence of this is provided at the end of this chapter, in a summary of James and Jane’s son Rod Sutherland’s 1854 pilgrimage from Red River to Oregon, in which the author advised that all those of Indigenous descent on this eight-month journey spoke Cree. Bill Waiser advised in his book, *A World We Have Lost, Saskatchewan Before 1905*, that during Henry Kelsey’s thirty-eight-year career (1684–1722) with the Hudson’s Bay Company, Kelsey “prepared a pamphlet, *A Dictionary of Hudson’s Bay Indian Language*, that the company printed and distributed to all posts in the expectation that servants would learn Cree.” Further, in the late 1780s, Waiser explained that the HBC sent a few men to winter “with small bands . . . [to] learn the language.” Not long after the 1821 merger, Waiser noted that HBC Governor George Simpson introduced rules to try to end “the use of Indian languages” by all company personnel but by this time, it seems a virtual certainty that the Sutherland family had spoken Cree for many years. James Sutherland had every incentive and opportunity to learn Cree during his long marriage and during his thirty-year HBC career, working in several remote locations throughout the Northwest. Additionally, it would be natural for the children’s mother to talk with her family in her own language at least some of the time, especially when James was not home. The children would have played with First Nations children in the small, isolated communities in which the family lived for many years. This contact would have allowed the children to improve their fluency in Cree.

James and Jane Sutherland had nine children who reached adulthood, five sons and four daughters, according to the records of The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert's Land. Their children were:

Sally (Sarah) Sutherland

Sally was born in the Northwest, about 1800, when her mother was 15. Sally married Roderick McKenzie, about 1817, following Native custom. Roderick was born circa 1791 and hailed from the parish of Gairloch, about 110 kilometres west of Inverness, Scotland. Sally and Roderick were married by Reverend



Sally Sutherland McKenzie, circa 1828. COURTESY T. ERICSON

John West of St. John's Anglican Church in Fort Alexander on March 20, 1823. Fort Alexander is 125 kilometres northeast of Winnipeg, on the eastern side of Lake Winnipeg.

James and Jane's daughter Sally was once described by Reverend West as "one of the best informed and most improved half-caste" women he had met.

Sally and Rod's four daughters were:

- **Arabella McKenzie**, b. circa 1818; married John Clarke Spence in 1832; Arabella and John travelled to the Pacific Northwest in 1841 on a dangerous 130-day overland journey; this couple had seven children; after John's death in 1850, Arabella married James Taylor in 1853 and they had five children; she died circa 1894 in the state of Oregon.
- **Margaret McKenzie**, (October 1821-November 1834 Red River Settlement)
- **Jessie (also Jessy) McKenzie**, b. 1824 Lac La Pluie, Ontario; married Philip Kennedy in 1838, at 14 years of age, and they raised a family; she was buried on January 27, 1863, at age 42, in St. Andrew's Anglican Church Cemetery in Lockport, Manitoba

- **Jemima McKenzie**, b. 1826; married William Ross first and they had five children; William died in 1856; Jemima married William Coldwell in 1860 and they had children; she died in 1912 in Rosser, Manitoba

Roderick McKenzie entered the service of the HBC on June 17, 1811, at Stornoway, in the Outer Hebrides of Scotland. He started as a “writer” in the East Winnipeg district. Over the years, he worked in the Winnipeg, Athabasca, Lac La Pluie, Churchill and Nelson River districts of the Hudson’s Bay Company. His final posting was in 1825 to Portneuf, Quebec, where he served as chief trader-in-charge for five years until his untimely death at about 38 years of age. Portneuf is 60 kilometres west of Quebec City on the Saint Lawrence River.

The Hudson’s Bay Company Archives holds a July 7, 1829, letter from James McKenzie that reads, in part: “I am sorry to inform you that Mrs. R. McKenzie expired yesterday morning at 4 O’clock [at about age 29]—16 hours before her husband’s arrival. He is in the greatest distress . . . She died the 9th day [July 6] after being delivered prematurely of a boy [who died that day].” Sally was buried in St. Andrew’s Church Cemetery in Quebec City on July 8, 1829.

Rod enjoyed an exemplary career with the HBC until it ended tragically. He was promoted to chief trader, at 30 years of age, in 1821. A March 1, 1831 letter in The Hargraves Collection [of correspondence] from C. Cummings to James Hargrave reads: “I presume you have heard of the melancholy end of the unfortunate R’d [Roderick] McKenzie in January 1830 who was found a corpse [frozen] by one of his men some distance from the Establishment of Portneuf, his wife had died some months previous at Quebec.” When Rod died, their four girls were orphaned at ages three, five, eight and eleven years. These children were raised by their grandparents James and Jane Sutherland in the Red River Settlement.

In his August 7, 1838 letter to his brother, James Sutherland advised that his granddaughter Jessy McKenzie was expected to inherit from her father, nearly 1,000 pounds sterling, when she came of age. James estimated this money would provide Jessy an annual interest income of 30 pounds sterling. I assume that Jessy’s sisters inherited similar amounts.

Nancy Sutherland

My third great-grandmother Nancy Sutherland married Robert Clouston. Information about this couple is provided in Chapter 13.

William Sutherland

William was born on April 23, 1806 in the Northwest, married Elizabeth Logan (born December 1810 in Sault Ste. Marie) on December 31, 1831 in the Red River Settlement (RRS), had eleven children, and died in St. Paul's parish, Manitoba. The records of St. John's Cathedral Cemetery show that William and Elizabeth Sutherland are buried in Block B, Plot 48 North Half and South Half, respectively. Elizabeth's index card says her maiden name was Logan and that her father was Robert Logan. William died on January 31, 1879, at age 72, and Elizabeth died on November 18, 1889, at 79 years of age.

Elizabeth Sutherland

Elizabeth was born on December 1, 1810 in Cumberland House and married James Inkster on December 16, 1830 in the Red River Colony. James was born in Orkney on August 5, 1804. The couple had twelve children. James was buried, at 60 years of age, on May 17, 1865 in Red River. Elizabeth passed away in August 1897, at age 86, in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan.

Letitia ("Lettie") Sutherland

Letitia was born about 1815 in the Northwest and married on December 16, 1830 to James Inkster, who was born in 1806 in the Northwest. The couple had seven children. Letitia died on April 20, 1883 in the rural municipality of Woodlands, Manitoba. Her headstone (at St. John's Cathedral in Winnipeg) reads: "Letitia, wife of James Inkster, died April 20, 1883, aged 69 years; also James, son of the above, died June 15, 1861, aged 22 years."

James Sutherland

James was born on January 3, 1817 in the Northwest, married Maria Bird (1822–1891) on November 1, 1838 in Middlechurch, St. Paul (St. John's Church Registry in Winnipeg), and had eleven children.

John Sutherland

John was born on January 8, 1819, married Catherine Cunningham (born 1831) on December 20, 1849 in the RRS. The couple had 14 children.

Roderick McKenzie Sutherland

When Rod was born on May 24, 1821, his father was posted to the Swan River trading post in the Northwest. His birth occurred a few days before his father, James Sutherland, was promoted to chief factor and assigned to Fort Edmonton. Rod was named to honour James' son-in-law. Rod Sutherland married Mary Emily Lowman in the Red River Settlement on January 18, 1849 in the St. John's Anglican Cathedral. Mary was born in London, England, likely on April 10, 1827, and she had immigrated to Red River with her family in the early 1830s. Rod and Mary had eleven children who grew to adulthood. The first three were born in the Red River Settlement, and the others were born in Oregon, after the family immigrated there in early 1855 (see the end of this chapter). Rod



Roderick Sutherland, circa 1875. COURTESY OF JEREMY WHITE

Sutherland was a schoolteacher at St. Helen's Hall (now Oregon Episcopal School, Portland) and at an Episcopalian Chinese Mission School. The 1860 census for Washington County, Oregon, likely in or near Hillsboro, shows Rod was a schoolteacher and he reported the value of his personal estate at \$4,200, with no value reported for real estate. Hillsboro is 30 kilometres west of Portland. By the 1870 census, Rod and his family were still living in Portland, and Rod continued to work as a schoolteacher. The 1880 Portland census reports the family living at 138 Ninth Street in Portland, and Rod is listed as a gardener. Rod died, at age 75, on September 5, 1896 and Mary died, at 89 years of age, on April 5, 1917. Rod's "Physician's Certificate" on death states that he died of a stroke (cerebral apoplexy). He appears to have

had a stroke four years earlier or had a series of strokes over that period. Both are buried in Portland's Lone Fir Cemetery.

George Sutherland

George was born in Fort Severn on Hudson Bay in 1824 and baptised on April 19, 1826 in the Red River Settlement. He died, at 24 years old, on April 28 and was buried on May 1, 1848 at St. John's Cathedral Cemetery in central Winnipeg.

All the children, except William, who was in Britain at the time, and George who was born later, were baptised at Norway House on August 12, 1821 by the Reverend John West. Before 1820, there was not a member of the clergy in the Northwest.

While Sutherland shared many of the attitudes of his race and class, Parks Canada historian Robert Coutts said he did remain faithful to his Native wife, Jane. Sutherland, like Alexander Ross, was considered one of Red River's original "patriarchs" by Coutts. Coutts went on to say that Sutherland "owned eighteen head of cattle, five horses, and three carts – material assets which put him among the elite of landowners at the Rapids." In an 1831 letter, James Sutherland noted that he had "800 Acres of the best of land." According to Coutts, in Red River's developing social structure, the principal settlers aspired to be British "gentlemen." To accomplish this goal, "their families' Native heritage had to be downplayed. Education was considered the key in gaining their children's entry into Red River's upper class. To have their mixed-blood offspring achieve a station in life comparable to themselves was considered by these former traders to be of paramount importance."

The 1829 census of the Settlement records a total population of 2,100.

By 1831, Sutherland's correspondence notes that two of his daughters had married men named James Inkster. One Inkster was an Orkney blacksmith and the other was "a half breed" (Métis) and the son of an industrious man with a lucrative watermill. Sutherland noted in his 1831 correspondence that his son Bill had been "courting [Elizabeth Logan] the daughter of a Gentleman in this place for several years" and that Bill received materials for a house and a hundred acres of land from James when the woman's father agreed to the marriage. Sutherland also noted in this letter that his "son-in-law Clouston [Chapter 13] is still a neighbour and doing well."

On June 12, 1831, James' father, George, died in Scotland "at a good old age." James Sutherland wrote to his brother, John, on this occasion to say: "I consider myself as one of the Patriarchs of Old, and my Roots and Branches have taken so firm hold in the Soil, that it will be impossible for me to leave." He had all of his children and their spouses and nine grandchildren near him, including direct responsibility for the four orphaned daughters of his eldest daughter, Sally McKenzie, and her husband, Roderick.

The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert's Land reported in 1992 that the population of the Red River Settlement in 1832 totalled 2,700, with 1,200 English-speaking people (most located west of the Red River) and 1,500 French-speaking residents (most living east of the Red River). The Red River Settlement was largely north of the junction of the Red and Assiniboine rivers, stretching for about 40 kilometres along the Red River. Even by 1870, Winnipeg's population was only 215, as described on page 254 in Chapter 16.

Jane Sutherland (Flett) died in July 1835, at around age 50. She was buried on July 7, 1835, in St. John's Cathedral Church Cemetery, near the junction of the Red and Assiniboine Rivers.

Robert Couatts noted that "by 1835 Sutherland . . . [was] one of the most successful farmers in the district."

Letters to brother John in Orkney advise that, by 1840, William and his wife had five children, and young James had married Maria Bird, daughter of a prosperous merchant. Sutherland also noted he had three sons still at home with no inducement to even learn a trade, as most trades paid very little; the exception was working as a blacksmith but it was "such a dirty slavish business that few are inclined to follow it."

In an August 10, 1840 letter, James commented, with unusual force and frustration, about the racial discrimination within the Hudson's Bay Company. In referring to the predicament of his son Roderick, Sutherland said: "[he] is a good scholar, has a better education than I ever had, but how can he apply it? I could get him in the Cos. Service [HBC], but half-breeds as they are called, has [*sic*] no chance there nor are they respected whatever their abilities may be, by a parcel of upstart Scotchmen." Sutherland was alluding to the racist nineteenth-century policies of HBC's Scottish CEO, Sir George Simpson.

Sutherland's 1841 letters further reveal the very poor prospects for young people in Red River. William was at this time "generally in misery and today

cannot command a Shilling.” His married son James, his other sons, two married daughters and several grandchildren were dependent on their father, James. Several people had tried their fortune in the United States, but had been unsuccessful. James’ granddaughter Arabella McKenzie married John Spence, and they undertook a potentially dangerous 130-day journey in 1841 to the Pacific Northwest, with 119 other Red River people, in search of a better life.

In his August 10, 1842 letter (the last we have before he died two years later), James Sutherland advised that he was preparing to build a new house to replace his existing Strawberry Point home that was “nearly tumbling about me” and “£300 will not finish it.” He commented that he was endeavouring to keep his sons “more decent than those young men about me.” He noted that: “We have now here some rich old fellows that has [*sic*] acquired large fortunes in the [HBC] service, have gotten married to European females and can cut a dash, and have introduced a system of extravagance in the place that is followed by all that can afford it, and I to keep up a little respectability have followed it in a small way.”

In the 1842 letter Sutherland noted that “my health . . . [is] always best in the summer and even in the severe cold of winter [and] . . . in the spring and fall when the weather is rainy and the sky gloomy, I have Bilious weeks together, and constant depression of Spirits.”

In his 1838, 1840 and 1842 correspondence, Sutherland commented on the fact that he remained single but had clearly considered getting remarried, and almost did, in 1837, to an English woman. In 1842, he noted that:

An agreeable partner and companion would contribute to my comfort and would be a great saving in my house, but I dread future consequences for what has happened before might happen again, and it would be the height of madness in me to risk the chance of having a young family at my age

I have three daughters and two sons married, but with the exception of Clouston, they all require my assistance more or less, my three youngest sons now are men [and] is [*sic*] still with me, they work on the farm and do some things in the carpenter way for our use, but cannot earn a shilling for themselves, so that I must find them all their wants at a much greater expense than I can well spare.

As related in an 1845 letter from Sutherland's son-in-law Robert Clouston (Chapter 13), on Monday, September 30, 1844, James Sutherland had dinner with three of his sons: John, Rod and George, as well as two granddaughters: Jemima McKenzie and her sister Jessy, and Jessy's husband, Philip Kennedy. Kennedy, who married Jessy in 1838, was a son of James' close friend from Orkney, Alexander Kennedy. James did not comment about poor health at dinner, but later, he told his housekeeper that he was not feeling well. That night in his bedroom, James Sutherland unexpectedly collapsed and died. He was 67 years of age.

Sutherland and a number of other family members are buried at St. John's Anglican Church (Cathedral) in Winnipeg. These family members include: sons William and George (died at 24 and buried in Block A, Plot South Half), and daughters Nancy Clouston (died at age 44 on December 21, 1848) and Letitia Inkster (died at 69 years of age). James is recorded in the church's Burial Register #1 at Entry #291. The church is located near the Red River, about two kilometres north of present day Portage Avenue and Main Street, in the city centre.

By agreement within the family, Robert Clouston conducted James Sutherland's funeral. "A great number of people [attended] with two ministers and all the protestant Gentlemen of the Colony," as Clouston advised in his 1845 letter.

Many early settlers to Red River came from Scotland, but found it necessary to join the Church of England (Anglican Church), because the Church of Scotland, despite many petitions from the Hudson's Bay Company, did not arrange to have a minister move to the Red River Colony until 1851. The 1923 book, *Women of Red River*, notes that: "The first Church of England missionary, John West, arrived in 1820 and he and his successors were unrelenting in their work of providing Red River with churches and schools." As a result, the Sutherlands and the Cloustons became attached to St. John's Anglican Church and not the Kildonan Presbyterian Church, as one might expect. Around the time the Presbyterian church was built in 1854, some residents changed allegiances.

Despite the ongoing drain on his resources to fund, to some degree, nearly all his children and grandchildren, James Sutherland left about £5,600 of three percent Consolidated Funds of the Bank of England (commonly called "consols") to his heirs. This amount was divided: brother John £400,

each son £560 (x5), each daughter £480 (x3) and Roderick, as the residual legatee, the remaining £960, before any debts and duties. Sutherland also had other property (including his 800-acre farm, house and livestock), but these assets were not mentioned in the will. Sutherland was working with a lawyer in 1844 to draft a new will at the time of his death but the will “proved” in London, England, on May 30, 1846 and available through the National Archives is dated December 7, 1835. The 1835 will refers to consols totalling £7,000. The executor of the will was Alexander Christie, governor of the Red River Colony.

One distribution that I know of was to James’ brother, John, who received a cheque for £400 (or 80% of the £500 stated in the 1835 will) in 1846, after the will had been probated in London. Accordingly, all amounts as shown in the previous paragraph reflect a proportionate reduction for all beneficiaries. I have assumed that the consols had been drawn down about 20% by the time of Sutherland’s death.

A second source of information on James’ final estate comes from Roderick’s 1892 will in which he bequeathed the remaining £600 of consols to his wife, Mary, that Rod had inherited from his father, James, and £85 of consols that remained of his inheritance from his younger brother, after George’s death in 1848.

For most of the 1800s and up to the start of the First World War, £1 was worth just under US\$5, according to an October 13, 2016 article written by James Connington for London’s *The Daily Telegraph*.

Even one year after Sutherland’s death, his children had become more independent and enterprising. Rod Sutherland (then 24) wrote to his uncle John Sutherland in Orkney on August 6, 1845 to say: “John and George are away the whole week and return on Saturday, they being busy procuring hay.” Rod was busy with school during the day but on weeknights “I have not a soul to speak to.” He added that “I wish I was [*sic*] out of this place and would go but I don’t like altogether to make a sacrifice of the new house . . . [that] John, George and I live in.”

Rod Sutherland’s August 6, 1846 letter to his Orkney uncle notes that “there is a kind of Dysentery [in the Colony] . . . and it is the most awful disease . . . it is not an uncommon thing to see six or nine burials in two days.” He stated that “the Sutherlands have not caught the disease yet but James’ wife and child are in a ‘very precarious state’.”

Then 50 years of age, William Sutherland wrote to his uncle John at Knockhall Farm, St. Margaret's Hope, Orkney, on August 11, 1856, and included a comment that the "Red River Settlement is beginning to improve in every way." Unfortunately, John Sutherland would not have received this August letter as he passed away in May, as reported earlier in this chapter.

Oregon bound

In May 1854, 65 men, women and children, including Rod Sutherland and his family, began an adventurous and potentially dangerous journey from Red River to Oregon. They arrived in Walla Walla, Washington by Christmas Day 1854. Rod and Mary Sutherland's fourth child was born in Milton, Oregon, on February 1, 1855.

John Campbell (then 22) was part of this adventurous group. He summarized his recollections of this trip, later in life, in a paper published by the University of Washington. My information on this Oregon pilgrimage is drawn from Mr. Campbell's description of their journey.

The travellers opted to use the Hudson's Bay Company's trails—a long, indirect route—to avoid hostile First Nations.

On the prairies, they travelled on large, two-wheeled wooden Red River carts (not covered wagons) pulled by oxen. Before the travellers started into the mountains about the end of August, the Red River carts were dismantled and the wood was used to create pack saddles to carry their belongings on horses and oxen.

These ambitious travellers included James and Jane Sutherland's son, Rod (33), his wife, Mary (27), and their children, Alfred (3) and Edith (1). Rod and Mary's oldest child, Alice (5), stayed in Red River (likely ill) with her grandmother. Alice later emigrated to England, with her English grandmother, never to see her parents again.

This trip was a unique opportunity for the Sutherlands to leave Red River. Rod and Mary were very anxious, perhaps desperate, to leave for the chance of a better life than Red River offered. Rod Sutherland expressed a keen desire in an 1845 letter to his uncle in Orkney to leave Red River, as mentioned earlier in this chapter. The only other settler migration from the Red River Settlement around this time was in 1841.

Campbell noted that about 100 Cree joined the travellers somewhere on

the Canadian prairies and stayed with them until Fort Edmonton. Campbell pointed out that “these Cree Indians were very friendly to our party . . . [and] most in our party were half-breeds, and we could all speak their language fluently.”

On a separate matter, Campbell said that the Oregon-bound group stayed at the Hudson’s Bay Company’s Fort Pitt in what is now northwest Saskatchewan. Fort Pitt maintained 350–400 sled dogs. Campbell advised that: “There was one of our party that was bringing [*sic*] three head of sheep along with his cattle, the dogs cleaned them out the first night there [Fort Pitt], so the Sutherland’s flock was no more.”

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author’s family:

1. George Sutherland
2. James Sutherland married Jane Flett
3. Nancy Sutherland married Robert Clouston
4. Nancy Clouston married William Flett
5. James Flett married Frances McLean
6. Frances Flett married Walter Young
7. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
8. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
9. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
10. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Robert Clouston and Nancy Sutherland

My third great-grandfather Robert Clouston was baptised in Orphir, Orkney, Scotland, on January 29, 1793. Orphir is a parish on the Mainland, not far from the capital of Kirkwall. “The Mainland” is the largest island in Orkney.

My search of the baptism records of the Church of Scotland in the Orkney Library & Archive in Kirkwall revealed only one couple named Clouston who had a son Robert, born between 1780 and 1802. This boy was the son of John Clouston and Isobel Wilson, who were married on February 5, 1792, according to church records.

Robert Clouston had a brother, George, baptised on March 9, 1794, and a sister, Catharine, who was baptised on July 13, 1795, according to church records. Catharine married Thomas Halcro on March 21, 1815. This couple raised three daughters on a 19-acre croft called Evie, near Swanbister Bay, Orphir.

While I don't know if Robert was ever able to visit his Orkney family after arriving in British North America in 1812, his April 1, 1850 last will and testament reads: “I give my beloved sister Catharine of the Parish of Orphir in the County of Orkney . . . the sum of fifty pounds sterling.” This inheritance would have been a significant windfall for the Halcro family. In 1850, new hires from Orkney for the HBC fur trade typically earned 17

pounds sterling for an entire year's work, under a five-year contract. Catharine Halcro (Clouston) died on July 4, 1866, at 70 years of age.

The information on Robert Clouston's employment that follows was obtained from Hudson's Bay Company Archives' documents. When he was 19, Robert Clouston joined the Hudson's Bay Company, initially working as a blacksmith. Clouston sailed on the *King George* to York Factory, located at the mouth of Hayes River, on Hudson Bay. He left the port of Stromness in Orkney on June 23, 1812, and arrived on August 31, 1812. HBC records show he remained at York Factory for several months, after which he spent the next two years with the company in the Winnipeg district.

As he was literate, Robert was able to transition during his career from his role as a blacksmith to working indoors. Such a transition was unusual. We know from Peter Fidler's HBC Brandon House journal that on December 9, 1815, Robert was working at Brandon House as a blacksmith, and he may have continued with this type of work until Fort Wedderburn when he became a clerk about 1818.

Robert worked at a variety of HBC posts, including Brandon House



Orphir Village, The Mainland, Orkney.

(1815–16), Swan River (1816–17), Fort Hibernia (1817–18) and Fort Wedderburn in the Athabasca district (1818–21), where he was promoted to “clerk” (see the explanation of this position below). Clouston took charge of Berens House in April 1821. Berens House may refer to Berens River post, in the Norway House district. After Berens House, Robert worked at Fort Chipewyan until his retirement in 1828 to the Red River Settlement. Fort Chipewyan was one of largest trading posts within the HBC, and is located at the western end of Lake Athabasca, in northeast Alberta, roughly 1,500 kilometres northwest of Winnipeg. Fort Wedderburn was the HBC fort on Lake Athabasca, before the Company merged in 1821 with the North West Company’s Fort Chipewyan, three kilometres away.

Robert Clouston had intended to retire from the HBC in 1827 to become a farmer, but in an August 13, 1827 letter to his brother, John, James Sutherland explained that Clouston failed to give the company the one year’s notice that he was obligated to provide under his employment contract. Because a suitable replacement was not available, the company required that he stay on at Fort Chipewyan for an additional year or face a significant financial penalty.

Robert Clouston would have met the explorer of North West Passage fame, then-Lieutenant John Franklin, on his first trip overland to the mouth of the Coppermine River on the Arctic Ocean. With support from the Hudson’s Bay Company, Lieutenant Franklin started his 1820 expedition at York Factory on Hudson Bay. He followed the HBC route through Cumberland House to Lake Athabasca where he stayed from March until July before heading further north, as described in Pierre Berton’s book, *The Arctic Grail*. Clouston would have seen Franklin a second time, in the summer of 1825, when the explorer passed through Fort Chipewyan from New York on his way to Great Slave Lake and the Arctic beyond.

In 1828, he retired, at 35 years of age from the HBC, after 16 years of service, to enter the next chapter of his life as a successful farmer, and to raise his family in the Red River Settlement. Clouston’s farm was on the west side of the river, in the lower part of St. Andrews’ parish, close to his father-in-law, James Sutherland’s farm. Register B which lists the “Grantees of Lands in Assiniboia under the Earl of Selkirk and the Hudson’s Bay Company, from 1812 to July 15, 1870” records Robert Clouston, and later his only adult son James, as owning lot #576.

An August 10, 1828 letter written by James Sutherland to his brother, John, noted that: “My son-in-law Clouston is averse to Canada, he intends to try this Place [Red River Settlement] for a year and then if it does not suit him he intends to go to Orkney.”

In his 2008 book *Simon Fraser, In Search of Modern British Columbia*, Stephen Hume provided the following explanation to convey an understanding of the title of “clerk” at HBC’s competitor company, the North West Company, in the early 1800s. Both companies would have had a very similar use of the term.

Clerks were not the lackeys forever stereotyped by Bob Cratchitt in Charles Dicken’s *A Christmas Carol*. Contracted to salaried positions for anywhere up to seven years, they had positions of substantial authority as official business agents for the North West Company. Trading post administration, inventory control, record keeping, quartermaster duties of doling out the rum rations, powder and shot, trading for furs under the direction of higher authorities, even acting as a physician for the inevitable wounds, injuries and illnesses were all responsibilities of a Clerk.

My third great-grandparents Robert Clouston and Nancy Sutherland (Chapter 12) were married in the summer of 1826 in the local sense of his taking a “country wife.” This observation is based on two separate comments in letters of James Sutherland in 1827 and 1828, when Sutherland referred to Clouston as having married his daughter Nancy in 1826. Robert and Nancy were married in the Red River Settlement on September 2, 1828, by Reverend William Cochran of St. John’s Anglican Church.

In 1825, asking the father in the Sutherland household for permission to marry his daughter was serious business. In his August 26, 1825 letter to his brother, John, James Sutherland wrote: “the young man that was to have my second daughter [Nancy]—him & me quarreled & of course he has not got her. She has had several other offers but none to my liking—of course she is still with me.” Nancy was 21 years old in 1825.

Nancy Sutherland was born in the “Northwest” (i.e., western Canada) circa 1804, when her father, James, worked at Cumberland House, in what

is now northeast Saskatchewan, approximately ninety kilometres west of modern day The Pas, Manitoba.

In an August 10, 1841 letter from the Red River Colony, James Sutherland, then 64 years old, advised his brother that: “Clouston is the only [financially] independent son-in-law that I have. He lives comfortable and well and is yearly adding to his former stock.”

Robert and Nancy Clouston had seven children who were all born, except Jane, in the Red River Settlement (RRS), according to the records of The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert’s Land:

- Jane Clouston – born on September 17, 1827 in Fort Chipewyan, Alberta, and died, at age 61, in the RRS on July 24, 1889 in St. Paul’s parish; never married; listed, as age 53, in the 1881 census as a farmer
- James Clouston – baptised on December 3, 1829 and died, at age 78, on August 18, 1908 in St. Paul’s parish; married Eliza Clouston (b. circa 1850) on January 12, 1865 in the RRS; James (51) and Eliza (31) are listed in the 1881 census with Anna Clouston (20)
- Nancy Clouston – born on January 27, 1832 (my great-great-grandmother, Chapter 14)
- Isabella Clouston – baptised on May 24, 1835 in RRS; married Thomas William Bunn (1830–1875) on March 16, 1854; buried on March 10, 1857 in St. John’s Anglican Church Cemetery; two children, John Robert Bunn (1855–1932) and Isabella Bunn (1857–1929)
- Jemima Clouston – born on November 20, 1838 in St. Paul’s parish and died, at age 49, on October 31, 1888 in St. Paul’s parish; married John Robert Bunn (1832–1878) in 1859; children in the 1881 census: Isabella Bunn, 18, Anna Bunn, 14, William R. Bunn, 9, Francis F. Bunn, 5 (four other children died in infancy)
- Robert Clouston – baptised on July 11, 1841 and died in the RRS as a young boy on April 21, 1845
- Sarah Clouston – baptised on December 19, 1843 and buried in the RRS, at age 12, on November 22, 1856.

The Lord Selkirk Association information above is consistent with a July 30, 1845 letter written by Robert Clouston. In this letter, Robert noted he had five daughters and one son (after the death of Robert), and that the eldest

daughter was born in 1827 and the youngest in 1843, and that his son was the second child.

The Thomas Bunn who married Isabella Clouston was a farmer, lawyer, legislator and politician. The *Dictionary of Canadian Biography* reports that “Bunn, in a sense, made himself [Louis] Riel’s English half-breed lieutenant [during the Red River Resistance of 1869/70], despite the fact that there was no bond between them.” Bunn served in the legislature for St. Clements, after Manitoba joined Confederation in July 1870, until his early death in April 1875.

In that July 30, 1845 letter to his uncle John Sutherland, Clouston expressed deep remorse over the death of his son Robert, who died in April that year, at three years and ten months old. Clouston described the youngster as “an endearing child that time I think shall never erase him from our memories.”

The 1849 census for the Red River Colony records that Clouston was living with his children on a 20-acre cultivated farm with a house, two stables, four barns and a “shop and forge.” Robert may have earned his living both as a farmer and a blacksmith. Livestock comprised six horses, nine oxen, eleven cows, five calves, a bull and seven pigs.

Robert Clouston was buried in the Red River Settlement on July 14, 1850, at 57 years of age. Nancy Clouston (Sutherland) died in the RRS on December 21, 1848, at age 44. Robert and Nancy Clouston are both buried in the St. John’s Cemetery in central Winnipeg, along with son Robert, and daughters Jane, Nancy and Sarah.

At the date of Robert Clouston’s death, his six children were: Sarah (5), Jemima (11), Isabella (15), Nancy (18), James (20) and Jane (22). This young family had lost both parents by July 1850. As discussed in Chapter 14, Nancy Clouston married William Flett about 1850. Jane and James appear to have raised the three younger Clouston children. The youngest child, Sarah, died, at age 12, in 1856. Jane never married and James did not marry until 1865.

It seems Robert’s April 1, 1850 last will and testament may have been prepared when Robert was dying. The will directs that his eldest daughter, Jane, be one of his estate’s executors and that his monies be invested in the “three percent consols” (Consolidated Funds of the Bank of England in London). In addition to the value of his estate, Robert’s will points out that:

“each of my children has about one hundred pounds sterling at his or her disposal in light of their deceased mother [Chapter 12].”

Forty-one years after his death, Robert Clouston’s will and the will of his eldest daughter, Jane Clouston, were formally challenged. The June 25, 1891 issue of the *Manitoba Daily Free Press* reported on a lawsuit, in part, to interpret the meaning of Robert Clouston’s will. The article notes that: “There is a considerable sum belonging to the [Robert Clouston] estate to be divided between the beneficiaries entitled, when the court has ascertained their interests.” The newspaper also reported that Jane Clouston, under her will, directed certain moneys be paid annually to St. John’s College in Manitoba to be applied as she requested or, failing that, these funds would go to St. John’s College to create a scholarship fund to encourage meritorious students and scholars to be known as the “William R. Flett scholarship.” William R. Flett was Jane Clouston’s nephew, the son of her sister, Nancy Flett (Clouston), who attended Cambridge University in England but sadly died, at 33 years of age in 1886, as discussed in Chapter 14. The full character of this legal dispute as well as the outcome of *Macarthur v. Flett* are unclear to me.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. John Clouston married Isobel Wilson
2. Robert Clouston married Nancy Sutherland
3. Nancy Clouston married William Flett
4. James Flett married Frances McLean
5. Frances Flett married Walter Young
6. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
7. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
8. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
9. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Flett Family

William Flett (circa 1752–circa 1798) and Margaret Isbister (1758–circa 1819)

William Flett and Margaret (Peggy) Isbister were almost certainly my fourth great-grandparents. They were married on December 8, 1777, in the parish of Firth and Stenness, as documented in church records. Firth and Stenness parish is in the Mainland, about 20 kilometres west of Kirkwall, the Orkney capital. Orkney, Scotland, is briefly introduced in Chapter 12.

Church of Scotland records show that Peggy Isbister was baptised on October 15, 1758, in the parish of Firth and Stenness. Peggy Isbister's parents were Robert Isbister and Christian Isbister.

William Flett's parents were John Flett of Mirbister (circa 1713–circa 1774) and Margaret Smith (b. circa 1717) who married in 1739, in the parish of Firth and Stenness, according to church records. This couple is reported to have had three children: William, Margaret and John. National Records of Scotland have advised that there are no baptism or marriage documents from before 1784 for the parish of Harray, where the family lived.

For this family, references are made to Mirbister, Nisthouse, Netherbrough and Garth. All of these places are in close proximity, within the parish of Harray, about 20 kilometres northwest of Kirkwall. Garth is in Netherbrough and Netherbrough is about five kilometres south of Mirbister. Nisthouse is in Mirbister. An 1880 government Ordnance Survey describes Mirbister as: "A district of considerable size . . . about 1 mile in length by ½ [mile] in breadth."

William Flett and Peggy Isbister are reported to have had six children: William (b. circa 1778), Elizabeth "Betty" (b. circa 1780), Margaret (b.

circa 1782), Christian (b. circa 1784), Ann (baptised August 25, 1787) and Nelly “Hellen” (baptised December 4, 1791). William Flett (b. circa 1752) earned his living as a miller. He owned a half-interest in the Russland Mill in Netherbrough, Harray. This 18th-century watermill is located close to the Loch of Harray and has recently been restored as a three-bedroom home.

William Flett was known as William of Nisthouse. William and Peggy Flett had a life tenancy in Nisthouse from Robert Clouston. The 1880 Ordnance Survey describes Nisthouse as: “A large, and handsome stone building with garden and offices attached.” William’s parents, John Flett and Margaret Smith, also lived in Nisthouse.

William Flett died, at around age 46, in 1798. Peggy Isbister passed away, at 61 years old, in 1819.

James Flett and Nelly or Hellen Flett (1791–1818)

Hellen Flett was the youngest daughter of William Flett and Peggy Isbister. The Church of Scotland’s records report that Hellen (baptised Nelly) Flett was born in Mirbister, Harray, and baptised on December 4, 1791. Hellen was only about seven years old when her father died. Hellen married twice. Both of her husbands were named James Flett.

Hellen first married James Flett of Garth on December 26, 1811, as shown in parish records. This James Flett and Hellen Flett had two children: Margaret (b. October 10, 1812) and James (b. January 21, 1814). Margaret’s baptism record states that her parents are: “in Garth in Netherburgh [*sic*].” The baptism record for their second child states that the boy’s father had died before James was born. Margaret Isbister was a witness at both these births.

The 1880 Ordnance Survey, referred to earlier, notes that Netherbrough is: “A district of considerable size separated from Russland by the Burn of Layane . . . its length from north to south is about $\frac{1}{4}$ mile and mean breadth [*is*] $\frac{1}{2}$ mile” and that Garth refers to three farmhouses.

Margaret Flett (b. 1812) married John Johnston, a landed proprietor and farmer, and raised a family in Harray. She died of pneumonia at her home in Knarston, Harray on July 12, 1887, at 74 years of age, according to her death record.

Hellen Flett’s second marriage was to James Flett on December 31, 1816 in Harray parish.

The Church of Scotland’s records for the parish of Harray show that this

James Flett and Hellen Flett had twin children—William and Helen—born on August 25 and baptised on August 31, 1817.

William's twin sister, Helen, worked as a housekeeper during much of her life. The 1871 Orkney census, taken when she was 54 years of age, notes that Helen was a retired housekeeper who then worked in the parish of Harray as a "worsted knitter." At 59, Helen, a spinster, married James Sinclair (1812–1900), a widower, in the Free Church of Scotland on April 19, 1877. James Sinclair is listed in the church's marriage record as a "landed proprietor and farmer." Helen's father, James Flett (deceased), is noted in this 1877 marriage record as having worked as a "Seaman (Merchant Service)." Both James Sinclair and Helen Flett resided in Upperbrough, Harray parish. Helen died, at 90 years of age, on May 30, 1908, and is buried in the Harray Cemetery. For her death certificate, Helen's stepson, John Sinclair, advised officials that Helen's parents were James and Hellen Flett.

Sadly, Hellen or Nelly Flett died, at 26 years of age, on May 10, 1818, perhaps from complications related to the birth of her twin children. Her death is recorded by the Church of Scotland's parish of Firth and Stenness.

William Flett (1817–1882)

My great-great-grandfather William Flett was born and grew up in Orkney, Scotland. William was the son of James and Nelly (Hellen) Flett. The 1870 and 1881 Manitoba censuses provide William's age and confirm that he was born in 1817. The 1870 census also notes that his father was James Flett. He joined the Hudson's Bay Company in British North America in the Saskatchewan district around 1842, when he was about 25 years old.

William Flett (1817–1882) and Nancy Rowand (b. circa 1825)

William Flett married twice. His first wife was Nancy Rowand. The *Manitoba Daily Free Press* (now the *Winnipeg Free Press*) reported on September 23, 1882, that: "Mr. Flett . . . came to this country about forty years ago to enter the Hudson's Bay Company service at Edmonton, then the chief post in the Saskatchewan district. While there he married the daughter of Chief Factor Rowand, generally known as the Nabob of the North-West. By this marriage there was issue one daughter."

William Flett's first wife has proved to be a bit of a mystery because Chief Factor John Rowand had a daughter Nancy with his wife of forty



William Flett. REPRODUCED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CANADA'S NATIONAL HISTORY SOCIETY, PUBLISHER OF CANADA'S HISTORY MAGAZINE (FORMERLY THE BEAVER)

years, Louise Umphreville, but this daughter married Chief Factor John E. Harriott.

Chloe Clark, the genealogist for The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert's Land, worked diligently, with some help from me, to determine who Flett's first wife, Nancy Rowand, was. After considerable effort, we learned that Flett's wife, Nancy Rowand, was the daughter of Chief Factor John Rowand (1787–May 30, 1854), as the newspaper states, and Louise Laframboise. Nancy Rowand's parents are named in her September 1, 1843 marriage record. John Rowand had an extramarital relationship with Louise Laframboise.

A Catholic priest married Nancy Rowand (at about age 18) and William Flett (26) on September 1, 1843, in Fort Pitt or Fort Edmonton, as recorded in the Catholic Oblate registers (Page 47). Fort Pitt is 300 kilometres east of Edmonton, in today's province of Saskatchewan. The marriage record shows that Nancy Rowand was a minor at the time, probably born around 1825.

John Rowand was a senior member of the Hudson's Bay Company's management team and a close friend of Sir George Simpson, the governor-in-chief of the HBC. For many years, Rowand was responsible for the Saskatchewan district, headquartered at Fort Edmonton. McTavish Frobisher & Co. of Montreal hired Rowand as an apprentice clerk on April 20, 1803, when he was 16 years old, to work in the northwest fur trade for seven years. McTavish Frobisher was eventually folded into the Hudson's Bay Company. John Rowand was the son of Dr. John Rowand, a Montreal surgeon. Dr. Rowand was a medical student at the University of Edinburgh and, around 1782, became assistant-surgeon at the Hôtel-Dieu Hospital of Montreal.

Author J.G. MacGregor noted in his book *Czar of the Prairies* that John Rowand, during his marriage, had at least one other child from an extramarital relationship who he supported financially, although this child did not use the Rowand name. Because John Rowand and Louise Laframboise's daughter, Nancy Rowand (b. circa 1825), carried the Rowand surname, this offspring would certainly have been visible.

William and Nancy (Rowand) Flett's daughter, Nancy Flett, was born on February 23, 1845. The 1911 Manitoba census reports their daughter was born in Saskatchewan, indicating she was likely born in Fort Pitt.

Nancy Flett was baptised twice. The first baptism was at Fort Pitt on May 20, 1845 by Reverend John Rundle of the Methodist Church. Her name for this baptism was Nancy and the mother's half-sister attended this ceremony.

Nancy Flett was baptised a second time under the name Marie-Anne Flatte, by a Catholic priest on August 20, 1845, as recorded in the Oblate registers (Page 135). A notation on the baptism record states that she is six months old. The second baptism was likely at Fort Edmonton or Fort Pitt.

Alexander McKenzie (1837–1928) and Nancy Flett (1845–1920)

In an 1875 scrip application, made by Flett's second wife, and in the 1870 Red River census, William Flett and Nancy Rowand's daughter is listed as Nancy. On October 21, 1872, this Nancy Flett (27) married Alexander R. McKenzie (34), a clerk at the Hudson's Bay Company post at Fort Alexander, as recorded in Selkirk, Manitoba's St. Peter Dynevor Anglican Church Register #3, Entry 160. Fort Alexander is on the Winnipeg River, near the river's entrance to Lake Winnipeg on the east side of the lake. The marriage record shows her name as Mary and that Alexander's father was Alexander

McKenzie, a carpenter. The 1841 Scottish census lists Mr. McKenzie, Sr., as a gardener.

Alexander Ronaldson McKenzie was born on December 29, 1837, in the civil parish of Kiltarlity in Inverness County, Scotland. Alexander's parents were Alexander McKenzie (1810–1894), gardener and Elizabeth (Betsy) McLeod (1811–1902), who married on October 30, 1836, in the parish of Gleneig, Scotland, church records show. Betsy McKenzie's death record documents that she died a pauper in Nairn, Scotland, on May 31, 1902.

The 1911 Manitoba census records that Alexander immigrated to Canada in 1860, at 22 years of age. This is consistent with Alexander's employment sheet with the Hudson's Bay Company that shows he started his work on June 18, 1860. His initial employment was as an apprentice clerk and then a clerk at Upper Fort Garry (now downtown Winnipeg) from 1861 to 1872. He married in 1872 and relocated to serve as a clerk at Fort Alexander on Lake Winnipeg until 1879. The next five years he served as a clerk at Fort Frances (in the Rainy River district, Ontario), and his final three years with the company were back at Fort Alexander as a junior chief trader. In total, he served the company for 27 years. Chapter 13 provides an explanation of the role of a clerk.

The 1906 Manitoba census records that Alexander (68) and Nancy (58) McKenzie were living with their two youngest children, Daisy (21)



The Big House at Lower Fort Garry—residence to chief trader, apartments and dining hall.

and Fredrick (16), on their farm near Oakville, Manitoba. Oakville is 70 kilometres west of Winnipeg. The census shows that two men, in their mid-twenties, were living with the family to help with farm duties.

In April 1918, when Fredrick McKenzie enlisted for World War One, he was living with his parents, Alexander and Nancy, at 1716 East 27th Avenue in Vancouver, B.C.

Alexander McKenzie and Nancy Flett had seven children—six boys and one girl. These children were:

- Alexander William McKenzie (September 24, 1874—September 27, 1942)
- Walter Henry McKenzie (October 18, 1876—October 24, 1941)
- Charles Alfred McKenzie (October 9, 1878—January 7, 1890)
- Llewellyn McKenzie (February 14, 1880—April 25, 1917)
- Daisy Helen McKenzie (April 11, 1882—January 1, 1967)
- Douglas McKenzie (1884—1885)
- Fredrick Douglas McKenzie (July 18, 1889 or 1890—June 26, 1964)

Nancy McKenzie (Flett) died, at age 75, on November 27, 1920 in Vancouver, and her husband, Alexander McKenzie, passed away, at 90 years of age, in Los Angeles on February 11, 1928. Both are buried in Mountain View Cemetery in Vancouver, British Columbia, along with three family members, including sons Walter and Llewellyn.

William Flett (1817–1882) and Nancy Clouston (1832–1902)

I do not know when William Flett's first wife, Nancy Flett (Rowand), died. Nonetheless, sometime after she passed, William Flett (35) married Nancy Clouston (18 years—Chapter 13) around 1850. Nancy also used the name Anne at times. My great-great-grandmother Nancy Clouston was born in the Red River Settlement on January 27, 1832, in the parish of St. Paul, as documented in her scrip application. She was baptised on March 1, 1832, as shown in the St. John's Church Register #3, Entry 333.

William and Nancy Flett (Clouston) had six children, according to the records of The Lord Selkirk Association of Rupert's Land:

- William Robert Flett, b. July 24, 1852
- James Flett, b. June 23, 1856 (my great-grandfather—Chapter 15)
- Jane Ellen Flett, b. December 25, 1858
- Alfred John Flett, b. January 5, 1862
- Llewellyn Thomas Flett, b. July 10, 1866
- Anne Sarah Flett, b. September 2, 1868

Nancy Flett, the mother of these six children, signed a sworn affidavit on July 13, 1875 that these children were born in the Saskatchewan district or the parishes of St. Andrews/St. Paul in the Red River district. Anne Sarah Flett was baptised, on October 4, 1868, at Lower Fort Garry in St. Andrews, according to the Kildonan parish registers. Anne is the only child of William and Nancy Flett for whom there is a Red River Settlement baptism record.

In her 1875 affidavit, Nancy Flett (Clouston) certified that her children, once they reached 18 years of age, as well as William's daughter from his first marriage, qualified as "half-breeds" (Métis) as they were then labeled and "entitled to participate in the allotment and distribution of the 1,400,000 acres of land set aside for half-breed children pursuant to the statutes." William Flett also swore, in a scrip-related document, that he agreed with his wife's scrip application. Nancy Clouston's grandparents were James Sutherland, a Scot, and Jane Flett, a Cree (Chapter 12).

The Western Métis, a collection of researched articles, published by the University of Regina in 2007, notes that The Manitoba Act of 1870 set aside land for distribution among "the children of the half-breed heads of families" living in Manitoba on July 15, 1870. This land was distributed by lottery to the "children" (i.e., all unmarried individuals, regardless of age) in 240-acre parcels, that began in October 1876 and was completed in February 1880. The 240-acre parcels were "rectangles of open prairie, no closer than two to four miles to the 'settlement belt' along the rivers." "In the end, 6,034 patents for 240-acre allotments were issued to Métis children, for a total 1,448,160 acres."

Additional legislation in 1874 "granted \$160 scrip, redeemable in Dominion Lands, to all Métis heads of families, husbands and wives alike." Scrip started to arrive in June 1876. "In the end, 3,186 scrips were issued to Métis heads of families, while an additional 800 scrips were issued to original

white settlers of Manitoba and their descendants,” as recorded in *The Western Métis*.

Those who received either the children’s 240-acre allotment or the heads of families’ \$160 scrip could sell these assets if they preferred. In fact, some sales occurred in advance of actual documents becoming available. Many did sell and the prices varied greatly, but most sold for \$1 an acre or less. This was a meaningful source of cash. According to *The Western Métis* “a basic workman’s wage was about \$1.25 a day in the early 1880s, or \$375 a year for a six day week with two weeks off.”

A 2013 decision of the Supreme Court of Canada concluded that the Government of Canada failed in its obligation to the Métis under the 1870 agreement that brought Manitoba, as the fifth province, into Confederation. Essentially, the Court ruled the process was not handled fairly. The Court stated, in part, that the Crown “repeated mistakes and inaction that persisted for more than a decade, substantially defeating” the Manitoba Act. Also, “when children received scrip, they obtained significantly less than the 240 acres provided to those who took part in the initial distribution . . . and [the Crown] made it difficult for Métis to trade grants amongst themselves to achieve contiguous parcels.” Further, the Crown “failed to prevent Métis from selling their land to speculators.”

William Flett worked for the Hudson’s Bay Company for about forty years and rose to the rank of a commissioned officer, a chief trader. The 1882 article below says that William Flett “came to this country about forty years ago to enter the Hudson’s Bay Company service at Edmonton,” that is, about 1842. As mentioned earlier in this chapter, Flett was first married in Edmonton or Fort Pitt in 1843, where he worked with the HBC before being transferred to Lower Fort Garry. As a result, it is evident that his official employment page, available on the HBC Archives website, is incomplete, as it starts in 1862 as a clerk at Fort Pitt, Saskatchewan district. Near the end of 1867, he accepted a position as clerk at Lower Fort Garry. He was promoted to junior chief trader in 1872 at Lower Fort Garry and a full chief trader the following year in 1873—a title he retained until his untimely death in Toronto in 1882.

To add to what we know of where William Flett worked early in his HBC career, his daughter Jane Cowley (Flett) noted in a 1934 article that appeared in the *Beaver* magazine that, in 1862, “Mr. Flett was ordered from the Red River district to Edmonton House, where he remained until [the end of] 1867.”

As a chief trader in the Hudson's Bay Company, located at Lower Fort Garry, William Flett was classified as a "commissioned officer" along with a chief factor, and as such he shared in the profits of the company, albeit at one-half the profit sharing rate of a chief factor.

When the 1826 flood ruined the Hudson's Bay Company's headquarters in what is now Winnipeg, the HBC decided to build on higher ground. This was the beginning of Lower Fort Garry, located about 30 kilometres north of today's downtown Winnipeg. Completed in 1830, the fort was built to last with limestone, not wood. The fort was meant to be the administrative centre for Rupert's Land, the company's vast trading empire.

While it filled that leadership role for only a few years, Lower Fort Garry continued to play an important role in other ways over the years. British troops were stationed at the fort in the 1840s during the Oregon boundary dispute, when war with the United States seemed imminent. Opponents of Métis leader Louis Riel rallied there in 1869, and the North West Mounted Police trained its first recruits in about 1873 at Lower Fort Garry. It was also the site of the signing of the first Aboriginal treaties in the area. Until the mid-1880s, the fort served as a penitentiary and insane asylum.

William Flett's last will and testament refers to "my houses and lands" as well as "livestock there may be together with implements of husbandry tools and vehicles" that he might own at his death. It appears that, around 1880, at the time he signed his will, Flett owned a farm and perhaps other property.

As described in the newspaper account below, William Flett died, at 65 years of age, accidentally, from carbon monoxide poisoning while travelling to Montreal and staying at the Queen's Hotel in Toronto, on September 17, 1882. The Queen's Hotel was located where the Fairmont Royal York Hotel is today. These 1882 journeys from Lower Fort Garry to Toronto, and back, would have gone through the U.S., as the CPR rail line over Lake Superior was not completed until 1885.

Toronto's coroner noted in his death record that William Flett was "poisoned by gas which he left turned on . . . by mistake on retiring to bed last night."

Below is a transcript (no paragraph separations appeared in the original) of a September 23, 1882 *Manitoba Daily Free Press* (now *Winnipeg Free Press*) article:

Death of Mr. Flett

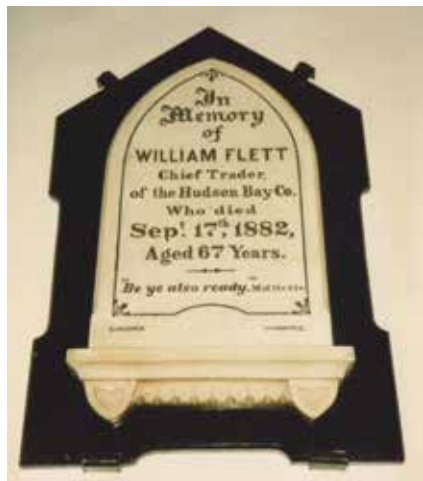
Brief Sketch of His Life

A telegraphic dispatch received the other day announced the sad intelligence of the death by suffocation in his room in the Queen's Hotel in Toronto, of William Flett chief factor [should be chief trader] of the Hudson Bay Company at Lower Fort Garry. The now deceased was a man of about 65 years of age and leaves a widow and grown up family to mourn this entirely unexpected demise.

Mr. Flett was a native of the Orkney Islands, and came to this country about forty years ago to enter the Hudson's Bay Company service at Edmonton, then the chief post in the Saskatchewan district. While there he married the daughter of Chief Factor Rowand, generally known as the Nabob of the North-West. By this marriage there was issue one daughter. The deceased was promoted to the chief factorship of Lower Fort Garry in 1868. His first wife died before leaving Edmonton and he subsequently married the daughter of the late Mr. Clouston who also came from the Orkney Islands and is a well known settler of St. Paul. By the second marriage, there was issue four sons and one [*sic*] daughter.

In the year 1876 [should be 1877], during a celebration of the Queen's birthday a son and a daughter of Mr. Flett were killed through a powder explosion which took place in the vicinity of the Lower Fort. This sad affair was a severe affliction to the parents. The only daughter of the first wife married Chief Factor Mackenzie now in charge of the Hudson's Bay Company's post at Fort Alexander on Lake Winnipeg.

William [Robert] Flett, the eldest son by the second marriage, is a mathematical master in a leading school in England. He is a graduate of



Plaque in Little Britain Church near Lower Fort Garry.

Cambridge University but received his early education in St. John's College here. James Flett, another son is the Rev. Canon Flett, of Prince Albert, N.W.T., and is one of the professors in Emanuel College, founded by the Bishop of Saskatchewan. He married a daughter of His Lordship last winter. Alfred, a younger son of the deceased, took his degree of B.A. at the last convocation of Manitoba University, and intended going to McGill College, Montreal, shortly to study medicine.

The daughter has been at home with her parents and was along with her father on his late visit east. The old gentleman had a severe affliction of the eyes [likely cataracts], and has [*sic*] lately lost the sight in one eye altogether. When Dr. Buller was here lately, Mr. Flett consulted him about his eyes on the advice of Dr. Lynch, his attending physician. The result of the consultation was that Dr. Buller advised him to visit Montreal to have an operation performed on one eye, the sight of which he had hopes of preserving.

About two weeks ago Mr. Flett, accompanied by his daughter, started east, and reaching Toronto put up at the Queen's Hotel with the results before stated. He had only been a couple of days in Toronto before the unfortunate affair occurred. Governor Graham, who has just returned from Montreal, met the deceased and it seems singular that he should remark that he had not seen gas since he left the old country.

The daughter returned from Toronto yesterday and the remains are expected today. They will be interred in the old churchyard at St. Andrews a short distance below Lower Fort Garry. The deceased was highly respected by the old and new settlers alike on the Red River and his death has cast a gloom over the Province and North-West, where he was universally known.

William Robert Flett

William and Nancy's eldest son, Robert Flett, attended Sidney Sussex College at Cambridge University from 1875 to 1879, and obtained a Bachelor of Arts. Through high marks on his entrance exams, he was able to attend Cambridge on a "sizarship." A sizarship allowed a student to obtain an education at a reduced cost, in return for carrying out certain duties.

William Flett's last will and testament excluded his eldest son, Robert, from sharing in the initial distribution of his estate at his death "on account of his having been advanced a considerable amount of money during his four years of his University course at Cambridge in England." Further, the will directs "that no one or more of the members of my family . . . or . . . any person connected to my family by marriage . . . shall have the right to claim . . . [that] William Robert Flett . . . refund the money I advanced to him while he was attending University."

The February 26, 1876 edition of the *Manitoba Free Press* reported on Robert Flett's accomplishment of being admitted to Cambridge University, and explained that the entrance exams were divided into three parts for honours students like Flett. Part I comprised four papers in mathematics and theology, part II comprised four papers in Latin, Greek and theology and part III was made up of three papers in higher mathematics. All three parts needed to be passed for an honours student, with no less than half marks on any paper.

The Alumni book for Sydney Sussex College at Cambridge shows the following entry for Robert Flett:

William Robert Flett—Adm. sizar at Sydney Oct. 11, 1875. Son (and h.) of Robert [should be William], merchant of Lower Fort Garry. B. there July 24, 1852. School, Bishop Machray's (under the Bishop). Matric. Michs. 1875; BA 1879. Ord. deacon and priest (Saskatchewan) 1884. Principal of Emmanuel College, Prince Albert, N.W. Provinces, Canada, 1884–8. Disappears from Crockford, 1889 [Note: Crockford was a record, at that time, of worldwide ordained ministers].

A 1934 article in *The Beaver* magazine (now *Canada's History*), written by Robert Flett's younger sister, Jane Cowley, stated that Flett presented the Blackfoot warrior suit shown in an 1874 photo to the British Museum. Further, she advised that in the early part of the 20th century, she and her husband saw the Blackfoot suit on display in the British Museum, while on a visit to London.

The British Museum has researched its records carefully from 1874 to 1934 and found no trace of receiving this unique and valuable article of clothing, nor does it have this warrior suit in its inventory today. I met with



Robert Flett, 1874, in a Blackfoot chief's warrior suit gifted to him by a friend. REPRODUCED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CANADA'S NATIONAL HISTORY SOCIETY, PUBLISHER OF CANADA'S HISTORY MAGAZINE (FORMERLY THE BEAVER)

two senior museum officials, the curator for the Americas and an experienced archivist. They kindly reviewed, in depth, their extensive search for this valuable Plains Indian suit.

Further, the curator had taken the initiative to send the 1874 picture of Flett in the Blackfoot warrior suit to the senior curator with the Royal Ontario Museum in Toronto, who is a renowned expert on Blackfoot artifacts. The ROM specialist compared this warrior suit with all those in his files, from both public and private collections around the world, and advised that he had never seen this Blackfoot suit.

Each such Native suit is unique in appearance. By the 1870s, this type of Native clothing had become a valuable collector's item; in fact, the British

Museum archivist did find an 1887 report to the museum's trustees stating that this type of artifact had become too expensive for the museum to acquire. The museum continues to possess the two Blackfoot warrior suits acquired in the last half of the 19th century, but neither is the one in question.

It seems likely, that during Jane Cowley's visit to the museum in the early part of the 20th century, both of the museum's suits were on display. At that time, I was advised that the museum displayed virtually all inventory, even when items touched. Without the picture of her brother in the Blackfoot suit in hand, Jane Cowley and museum officials may have mistaken one of the museum's two Blackfoot warrior suits for the one thought to have been received from Robert Flett.

My subsequent inquiries of senior curators at each of the Smithsonian Institute's National Museum of the American Indian and the Ethnological Museum of the Staatliche Museum in Berlin yielded no positive results.

After graduation from Cambridge University, Robert Flett went on to become an ordained minister and teach at Emmanuel College in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan. In 1884, he was promoted to principal of the college. Previously, Bishop McLean had been principal since its founding in 1879. A diary of John McLean, Bishop of Saskatchewan (Chapter 16) notes on July 13, 1885 that "Reverend W.R. Flett, BA is to be succeeded by Canon George McKay, BD (Chapter 16) as Church Mission Society missionary and

secretary at Prince Albert and tutor at Emmanuel College."

We know from William Flett's last will and testament, which was filed with the London Probate Department in England, that Reverend Robert Flett was living in London in January 1886; his address was No. 68 Scarsdale Villas, Kensington in the county of Middlesex in west central London, with St. Philip's Anglican Church around the corner. It is likely that Flett returned to England for medical help.



68 Scarsdale Villas

Robert Flett died in London, at the age of 33, on April 27, 1886 from “sarcoma of the lungs and spleen” (a sarcoma is a tumor that contains malignant cancer cells). He died at St. Thomas’ Home in Lambert, London. His death certificate states his occupation as “Clerk in the Holy Orders of 68 Scarsdale Villas, Kensington.”

James Flett

William and Nancy Flett’s son James is discussed in Chapter 15.

Jane Ellen Cowley (Flett)

William and Nancy Flett’s daughter Jane is listed in the 1891 Canadian census, at 32 years of age, and living with her mother and younger brother Alfred (28) in Winnipeg. Jane married Arthur Tebbs Cowley on June 23, 1897 in Winnipeg, when she was 38 and he was 41. Canada’s 1901 census shows the couple living in Winnipeg. Arthur was working as a professor, presumably at the University of Manitoba, earning \$960 in wages with another \$150 in other income annually. Arthur Cowley was born in England on December 20, 1855, and immigrated to Canada with his family in 1857. Arthur Cowley’s father was Abraham Cowley (1816–1887). Abraham was an ordained minister, and became an archdeacon in Manitoba later in his career. He received an honorary Doctor of Divinity from St. John’s College in 1867. Arthur was one of twelve Cowley children. Arthur likely retired, at age 55, when the couple moved to southern California in 1911. My dad, Hume Young, described his great-aunt Jane Cowley as a well-respected and well-liked person of integrity.

She looked after her nephew, John Flett (Chapter 15), who was impacted by a mustard gas shell during World War One. As he was not able to care for himself, John Flett moved to Long Beach, California, in 1919, and lived at 3843 East Broadway, Long Beach, with his aunt and uncle. John Flett is listed in the 1930 and 1940 U.S. censuses as a private residence gardener.

The Cowleys employed the services of a live-in, 18-year-old female domestic servant, at the time of the 1920 U.S. census. When the 1930 census was taken, they owned their home on East Broadway in Long Beach, which was valued at \$20,000.

The Cowleys enjoyed a comfortable lifestyle, even during the Great Depression of the 1930s. They had no children.

FLETT FAMILY



September 1902—Photo taken on the occasion of Nancy Flett's (Clouston) funeral; L to R Standing—John Flett (18), Jane Cowley (43); Seated—Alfred Flett (40), Frances Flett (17), James Flett (46); (Jane, James & Alfred are siblings and Frances & John are James' children)..

Jane Cowley wrote an article entitled “Lower Fort Garry in 1868” which appeared in the September 1934 issue of *The Beaver*, Canada’s history magazine, on her recollections of growing up at Lower Fort Garry from 1868 to 1882. The editorial to the article notes that she was the only surviving member of the family of the late William Flett. The article begins: “It was a lovely sunny afternoon, September 1st, 1868 when the late William Flett and his family drove into Lower Fort Garry in an old spring wagon after a long journey from Edmonton House [a thousand miles away]. They had come by York boat from Edmonton to Carlton House, and then across the plains with a brigade of carts to Fort Garry.”

Arthur and Jane Cowley died in Long Beach, at age 78, on January 10, 1934, and, at age 84, on January 1, 1943, respectively. They are buried in Fairhaven Memorial Cemetery, Santa Anna, Orange County.

Alfred John Flett

William and Nancy Flett’s son Alfred is recorded in the 1891 Canadian census, at age 28, as a single medical student living with his family in Winnipeg. He earned a Bachelor of Arts degree at the University of Manitoba in 1882, but apparently didn’t complete a medical education, as he had planned. By the time of the 1901 census, he was still single, and living in the Rossland riding of the West Kootenays, in southeastern British Columbia, working as a gold miner. Canada’s 1906 census reports that Alfred was back in Winnipeg and living with his sister Jane Cowley and her husband, Arthur, at least for a short period. Alfred immigrated to California in 1913. He is listed in the 1920 U.S. census as fully retired, and living on his own in Burbank. Alfred died in California on August 1, 1925, at 63 years of age. He is buried in Fairhaven Memorial Cemetery, Santa Anna.

Llewellyn Thomas and Anne Sarah Flett

The two youngest Flett children, Llewellyn (10) and Anne (8), were tragically killed by a gun powder explosion at Lower Fort Garry on May 24, 1877, during the traditional May celebration of the Queen’s birthday. Anne (also Annie) died on May 25, 1877, and Llewellyn died on May 26, according to cemetery records. A newspaper account of the tragedy reported that Dr. David Young (Chapter 11), who was the fort’s doctor, attended to the Flett children as well as others immediately.

The following appeared in the *Manitoba Free Press* (now the *Winnipeg Free Press*) on May 26, 1877, under the headline “Terrible Fatal Accident” from Friday’s *Daily Free Press*:

Last evening, Lower Fort Garry was the scene of one of the most distressing occurrences we have ever been called upon to record—and which, we regret to learn, was attended with fatal results. It appears the Queen’s Birthday was being observed in the usual manner at the fort, and in the evening, salutes were being fired in honor of the event. For this purpose, a quantity of damaged [gun] powder, which was “caked” owing to its having been damp, was being used.

The operations were being conducted by George Turner and Christopher Robertson, H. B. Company employees. Anvils had been fired, and the powder aforementioned was being made up into some kind of fireworks, when by some means the whole took fire, and from its being damp did not explode as powder ordinarily would but spluttered fire in every direction, enveloping the two men and six children who were looking on, in fire.

Two of the children, a boy and a girl, aged eleven and nine respectively were son and daughter of Mr. Flett, the officer in charge of the Fort; three were those of Geo. Turner, already named and one a daughter of Mr. McLeod. Mr. Abell and Mr. Smith, who saw the explosion from a distance, ran to the rescue. McLeod’s child died during the night, about four hours after the accident. Latest reports received are that Turner and the Flett children would almost certainly die, and that Robertson and the Turner children would scarcely survive.

John Smith burnt his hand so severely in attempting the rescue that the entire palm had to be removed by a surgeon. Dr. [David] Young was there immediately, and today physicians were sent there from this city.

By 1886, Nancy Flett was living in Winnipeg, at 185 Smith Street, which is in the heart of today’s downtown, only a few blocks southwest of the corner of Portage Avenue and Main Street. The 1891 census lists Nancy Flett (59) living with her daughter Jane (32) and son Alfred (28), a medical student.

The records of the St. John's Church Cemetery in downtown Winnipeg record five members of the Flett family, not including William Robert, buried in London, England; James, buried in St. Mary's Church Cemetery in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan; and Jane and Alfred, buried in California. Four of the five Fletts are buried in the St. John's Cemetery in Lot 46, N 1/2 Lot 47, Block B. The Flett buried a couple of lots away is Frances Mary Blake Flett (McLean), James' wife, who is buried in S 1/2, Lot 44, Block B.

The five William Flett family members buried in Winnipeg's St. John's Cemetery are:

- William Flett—died at 65 years of age on September 17, 1882
- Nancy Flett (Clouston)—died at 70 years of age on September 7th and was buried on the 11th, 1902
- Annie Sarah Flett—died May 25, 1877 at 8 years old
- Llewellyn Thomas Flett—died May 26, 1877 at 10 years old
- Frances Mary Blake Flett (McLean), James' wife—died at age 79 on September 19 and was buried on September 21, 1943.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. John Flett married Margaret Smith
2. William Flett married Margaret Isbister
3. Hellen Flett married James Flett
4. William Flett married Nancy Clouston
5. James Flett married Frances McLean
6. Frances Flett married Walter Young
7. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
8. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
9. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
10. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

James Flett and Frances Mary Blake McLean

The Reverend James Flett (Chapter 14) was born in St. Paul, Northwest (near the perimeter highway in north Winnipeg) on June 23, 1856, as recorded in his 1875 scrip application. My great-grandparents James Flett and Frances Mary Blake McLean (Chapter 16; born in London, Canada West, on January 18, 1864) married on January 18, 1882 in Prince Albert, in the Saskatchewan district of the North West Territories. Their wedding was conducted by Bishop John McLean, the bride's father. Prince Albert is about 150 kilometres northeast of Saskatoon and about 850 kilometres northwest of Winnipeg.

James Flett was the second oldest son of William Flett, chief trader-in-charge of Lower Fort Garry. In a January 1992 article which appeared in *The Beaver* (now *Canada's History*) entitled "In the Midst of Life," Ruth Buck, a historian, said that when William Flett relocated to Lower Fort Garry:

- his two older sons [Robert and James] had their first opportunity for highly qualified instructors, and in the fellowship of a boarding-school. St. John's was modelled on the lines of such an English public school as Westminster, and it was Bishop Machray's expectation that some seniors in the school would continue as theological students in the college. The older of the Flett brothers, William Robert, was

sixteen when he enrolled, and he did follow such a course, combining theological studies with mission work, and, in 1878 [*sic*], succeeding George McKay [Chapter 16] at Cambridge on another scholarship to Sydney Sussex College.

- James Clouston [*sic*] Flett was only twelve when he came to St. John's, and after matriculation, he continued for a few years at the school as an assistant-master. He was twenty-four when the work of Emmanuel College began, and Bishop McLean appointed him to the staff as a tutor, on the understanding that he would continue his studies in theology under McLean's instruction. He was ordained deacon in 1880, and priest in 1881, successfully completing the required course from St. John's late the same year for the degree of Bachelor of Divinity.

The December 22, 1877 *Manitoba Daily Free Press* provides a report on Christmas exams at St. John's College, listing three students who achieved first class results; one of those was James Flett in Theophilus Anglicanus, Greek Testament, and New Testament History. The same report also includes a listing for first class standing by Alfred J. Flett, James' younger brother, in Religious instruction, in the Fourth Forum of St. John's College School.

According to the college's website, the first six graduates of St. John's College as part of the University of Manitoba occurred in 1881, with two men receiving Bachelor of Arts and another four graduating with Bachelor of Divinity degrees. One of these four was James Flett. The University of Manitoba was incorporated in 1877, through the amalgamation of three colleges. The other two were St. Boniface College and Manitoba College.

James Flett was a Freemason, and the number of Masonic lodges was expanding. According to a Masonic lodge history,

The jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge had widened to such an extent that at the ninth Annual Communication held in February 1884, it was decided to constitute a new District to comprise all the territory west of the Western boundaries of Manitoba. By this arrangement, Kinistino Lodge meeting at Prince Albert, Saskatchewan Lodge at Edmonton, Wascana Lodge at Regina, Moose Jaw Lodge at Moose Jaw, and Bow River Lodge at Calgary were formed into the sixth



James (25) & Frances (18) Flett 1882.

Masonic District. The first incumbent of the office of D.D. G.M. was Rev. Canon James Flett of Prince Albert—a fine tribute to the pioneer lodge of the district and also to the brother who was Worshipful Master of Kinistino Lodge at the time this Lodge transferred its allegiance to the Grand Lodge of Manitoba.

An archivist at the University of Regina wrote the following information about James Flett:

James Flett, B.D., as he is referred to in reports of the mid-1890s, was formerly listed as the Rev. Canon James Flett, B.D. for the mid 1880s. Perhaps he left the ministry in the late 1880s or early 1890s.



James Flett circa 1900.

He held the post of inspector of Protestant schools in the Prince Albert district from an early date, probably 1884. Later, around 1890 he moved to Regina and it is in the period 1890–1896 that his clerical title is dropped. From 1896–1898 he took charge of school inspection in Eastern Assiniboia.

James (34) is listed in the 1891 census, living about 25 kilometres south of Prince Albert in Red Deer Hill with his family, and his profession is listed as “C.E. Clergyman.” At the time of this census, Frances was 27, with children Kathleen (7), John (6), Frances (5) and Guy (4), as well as two domestics, aged 12 and 16. As there was not another census in Saskatchewan until 1906 and as there is no family information to suggest that James’ family moved out of the Prince Albert area in the 1890s, I assume that James lived, at times, where his work took him. While the couple lived apart by 1905, I am not aware of when they actually separated.

Frances Mary Blake Flett (McLean) moved to Vancouver from Prince

Albert, about 1905, with her daughter Frances, shortly after the death of her eldest daughter, Kathleen.

Little is known of where Frances Flett lived in Vancouver, but we do know from her letters in 1924 and 1925 that she lived at the Abbotsford Hotel, 925 West Pender Street, in downtown Vancouver. It is also believed that she lived in Seattle around 1911. Jessie Locke, a great-granddaughter of Frances' father, Bishop John McLean (Chapter 16), has advised that in the 1920s Frances worked in Vancouver as a music teacher.

Frances later lived in a care home related to the Anglican Church on Marine Drive in Vancouver. She moved back to Winnipeg about 1936. In Winnipeg, she lived with her daughter, Frances, and son-in-law, Walter Young (Chapter 22) at 175 Arlington Street, as she could no longer live on her own in Vancouver.

Frances Mary Blake Flett (McLean) died, at 79 years of age, in Winnipeg on September 19, 1943, and is buried in the St. John's Cathedral Cemetery in downtown Winnipeg near her in-laws, William and Nancy Flett and their children who died at an early age. Frances Flett is interred in the plot designated as Block B, Plot 44 South Half.

A telegram from Prince Albert advised Frances, in Winnipeg, that her



Fannie Flett (McLean) (35) with daughters Kathleen "Daisy" (L) (15), & Frances "Ditty" (13)—circa 1898. COURTESY OF MARGE KRUGER

father, James Flett, had died on May 11, 1912, at 55 years of age. Flett died with pneumonia and is buried in Part 1, Plot 94 of the St. Mary's Church Cemetery, Prince Albert.

James and Frances (Fannie) Flett had four children, all born in Prince Albert:

- Kathleen Ann Flett – born on June 18, 1883 and died, at about age 22, in Prince Albert in 1905
- John William Douglas Flett (September 18, 1884—September 14, 1966)
- Frances Mary Blake Flett – my grandmother (October 5, 1885—May 6, 1972) (Chapter 22)
- Guy Netterville Hartland Flett – born on February 28, 1887 and died in Prince Albert, at 7 years of age, on September 20, 1894

John William Douglas Flett (1884–1966)

James and Frances' son John William Douglas Flett joined the Canadian Army in March 1916. John's military application records that he was living at 799 Jubilee Avenue in south Winnipeg and that his aunt Jane Cowley (Flett) of 3841 Broadway East, Long Beach, California, was his next of kin. Her home was about 500 metres from the ocean. For family members in Canada, he was known as Douglas, but he used the name John most of his adult life. As an adult, he had little contact with his Canadian family, including his sister, Frances.

On his military application, John Flett listed his "trade or calling" as clerk. He is described, in his application, as having blue eyes, a fair complexion, fair hair and being 5 feet 8 inches. His birth date in the application is September 18, 1886, although this year should have been 1884. He joined the 184th Overseas Battalion, arrived in England on November 11, 1916, and on March 29, 1917, landed in France with the 11th Reserve Battalion. He served as a private during the war.

His military service records with Library and Archives Canada show he was wounded by shrapnel, near the spine at shoulder-blade height, in France (Petit Vimy) on June 3, 1917. In this incident, John suffered "shell shock and burial—severe conditions," according to his military records. As he suffered no ongoing disability, he remained on duty. But on August 15,



John Flett, October 1940.

1917, during the Battle of Hill 70, he was impacted by an exploding mustard gas shell. This battle occurred on the outskirts of Lens, France. Lens is about 200 kilometres north of Paris. The mustard gassing ended his active duty and changed the fortunes of his life. He was admitted to hospital in southern England, and returned to Canada in February 1918. For his conduct during the war, he was awarded two gold bars.

John Flett was discharged in March 1918 as medically unfit. He was diagnosed at this time, in Winnipeg, as suffering from “effort syndrome.” The doctor assessed that he would be unable to return to his previous work as a hardware store clerk. His symptoms included headaches and tiring easily, both mentally and physically.

John lived with his aunt Jane Cowley (Flett) (Chapter 14) and her husband in Long Beach, California, for more than twenty years. John moved to Long Beach in December 1918. Initially, he worked at times as a bricklayer and later, as a landscape gardener. He became a U.S. citizen in August 1943. By the 1950 census, John was 66 years old, retired and married to May M. Flett (born in Missouri, also age 66). The couple lived in Apartment 2, 926 Appleton Street in Long Beach in 1950. Later, John lived in Apartment 110, 44 Alamitos, Long Beach.

John Flett died, in California, on September 14, 1966, a few days short of his 82nd birthday.

Frances Mary Blake Flett (1885–1972)

Chapter 22 is dedicated to my grandmother Frances Flett. Frances' nickname, to family members and friends who knew her as a child, was "Ditty." This name was derived from "ditto," as her appearance closely paralleled her older sister, Kathleen.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author's family:

1. James Flett married Frances Mary Blake McLean
2. Frances Flett married Walter Young
3. Hume Young married Elinor Hopper
4. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
5. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
6. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

McLean Family

John McLean and Lilly Cameron (b. circa 1773)

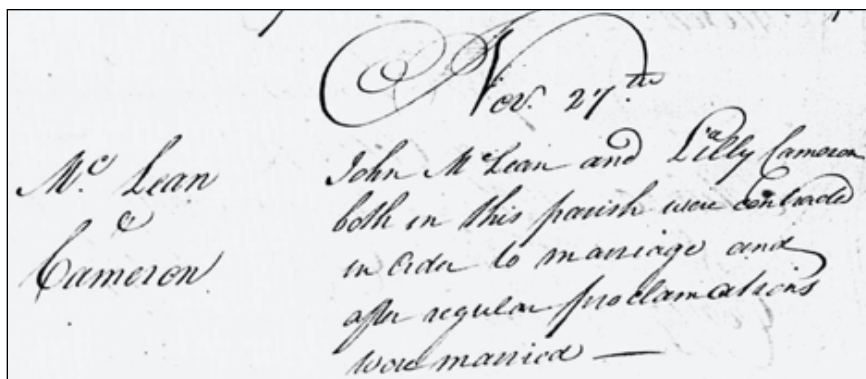
My fourth great-grandparents John McLean and Lilly (Lilias) Cameron were married in the Church of Scotland's parish of Banff on November 27, 1794, according to church records. Most descendants of John McLean and Lilly Cameron believe that Lilly was born around 1773 in the parish of Rothiemay, Banffshire. This birth year is reasonable, as she would have been around 46 years old when her youngest child was born in 1819. Lilly's birth records appear to have been lost.

There were a few John McLeans born within a likely timeframe in Banffshire and the neighbouring counties of Moray and Aberdeen. Consequently, I have been unable to learn about his family and when and where John was born.

John McLean worked as a "flaxdresser" for several years, as recorded in his childrens' baptism records. A flaxdresser's job was to prepare flax for spinning. By 1817, John was listed in these records as a "merchant."

John and Lilly McLean had 11 children—seven boys and four girls. The first four children were born in Banff, and the others were born in nearby Portsoy.

Banff is a town in today's Aberdeenshire, Scotland, that was in the historical county of Banffshire. Banff is situated on the North Sea, facing the town of Macduff, across the estuary of the River Devon. The Banff Bridge,



Parish of Banff, November 27, 1794 marriage record.

with its seven arches, finally tamed this unpredictable river in 1779. Banff, with a population today of almost 4,000, is 75 kilometres northwest of the city of Aberdeen.

Portsoy, where the McLeans settled, is located on the Moray Firth Coast of northeast Scotland, 12 kilometres west of Banff and 100 kilometres east of Inverness. Portsoy is an attractive, unspoiled village on the coast, with a superb natural setting for its harbour.

Today, Portsoy has a population of around 1,700. While the fishing industry has always been important for the town, Portsoy is also known for local jewellery made from “Portsoy marble” which, in fact, is made of serpentine. From the 16th century until recent times, Portsoy was in the civil and religious parish of Fordyce. The “old” harbour dates to the 17th century and is the oldest on the Moray Firth. The “new” harbour was built in 1825, for the growing herring fishery.

The Church of Scotland’s parish registers document the following baptisms for John and Lilly’s children:

- Margaret McLean—May 5, 1795 witnesses Allan & Charles McLean both in Banff
- Elspet McLean—December 31, 1796
- James McLean—July 2, 1799
- John McLean—August 17, 1801
- Charles McLean—July 26, 1803 (my third great-grandfather, see below)
- William McLean—October 29, 1805

- Theodore McLean—May 18, 1809
- Lilly McLean—January 5, 1813
- Catherine McLean—August 24, 1814
- Al Rainy McLean (as his name appears in the baptism record)—October 19, 1817
- Allan McLean—January 31, 1819

Margaret McLean is recorded as having been baptised only five months after her parents were married.

Charles McLean (1803–circa 1839) and Jannet Watson

The Church of Scotland's records for the parish of Fordyce show that Charles McLean and Jannet (Jessie) Watson were married on May 3, 1828.

My third great-grandparents Charles and Jannet McLean had three children baptised in the parish of Fordyce in Portsoy as listed below:

- John McLean—November 17, 1828
- James McLean—August 22, 1830
- Margaret McLean—September 16, 1831



Portsoy, Scotland.

Charles McLean is described as a Portsoy merchant in his children's baptism records. In this generation too, the first child was baptised only five and a half months after the parents married.

Charles McLean is believed to have accidentally drowned on May 30, 1839, at 35 years of age, when he was salmon fishing on the North Sea.

John McLean (1828–1886) and Kathleen Wilhelmina Flood (1840–1897)

John McLean was baptised in Portsoy on Monday, November 17, 1828. My great-great-grandparents John McLean (32) and Kathleen Wilhelmina Flood (20) married on May 2, 1861 in London, Canada West, 200 kilometres southwest of Toronto.

Catherine Flood (Chapter 6) is the name that appears in the parish register of Christ Church in Delaware, but throughout her life she was called Kathleen. She was born on July 17, 1840 in Delaware, Canada West, about 20 kilometres southwest of London.

Much of the material that follows is drawn directly from an article that appeared in *The Saskatchewan Anglican* in February 1987, authored by Canon Murdith McLean, a great-grandson of Bishop McLean. Another source of information is a December 1991 article written by historian Ruth Buck that was published in *The Beaver* (now *Canada's History*) magazine.

John McLean was educated privately until university. He attended King's College, Aberdeen University, where he graduated with an Master of Arts degree in 1851. McLean was a prominent member of the debating society connected to King's College, as he was "an excellent and ready speaker, with something of the gift of oratory." John McLean was educated in classics (receiving a "high place") and science ("with honours") at King's College, and there he met and became friends with Robert Machray. That friendship lasted the rest of McLean's life and was a major factor in shaping it. McLean named his first son after his friend, Robert Machray. He received an MA (ad eundem) from the University of Trinity College, Toronto, in 1859.

Soon after university, "he accepted an important position in one of the greatest manufacturing firms in London, of which an uncle of his was a manager." He was put in charge of foreign correspondence and during this work he learned some French, German and Spanish. It was probably

while in London that McLean became a member of the Church of England, eventually deciding to seek ordination. McLean moved “to British North America in 1858, after Isaac Hellmuth, the secretary of the Colonial and Continental Church Society in British North America, persuaded him to emigrate to Canada West.” Later, Hellmuth became the second Bishop of Huron and founder of the University of Western Ontario.

In Canada West, in 1858, at 30 years of age, McLean was ordained a deacon (August 1) and then a priest (December 15) by the first Bishop of Huron, Benjamin Cronyn. Initially, he was appointed curate at St. James’ Cathedral in Toronto and later, chaplain to the Garrison and curate of St. Paul’s Cathedral in London, Canada West.

John McLean was a founding council member and secretary of Huron College in 1863. Huron College (now Huron University College) was



Kathleen and John McLean.

incorporated on May 5, 1863, and is the founding college of The University of Western Ontario in London, Ontario.

In 1865, Robert Machray became the Bishop of Rupert's Land, a territory that then included practically all the land west of the Great Lakes to the Rocky Mountains. Machray later became the first Primate of the Church of England in Canada, from 1893 until his death on March 10, 1904. Part of Machray's plan as bishop was to revive St. John's College in Winnipeg as a theological college and a higher school. Robert Machray invited his friend John McLean west to head up the college.

McLean accepted and journeyed out with his family, in October 1866, to take up the positions of warden of the college, professor of Systematic Theology (also Divinity), examining chaplain, archdeacon of Assiniboia and rector of the Cathedral of St. John. This trip was made by the family from London, Canada West, via Minnesota to the Red River Settlement. The trip took three weeks and was similar to that taken in 1872 by Dr. David and Rosina Young, described in Chapter 11, except that the 750-kilometre trip up from St. Paul, Minnesota, to the Red River Settlement was "on a rough trail through wooded country."

During a speech in Montreal in 1877, McLean reflected on the changes to Winnipeg stating: "In 1866, it was nothing more than a backwards



1872 Winnipeg, corner of Portage Avenue and Main Street. COURTESY OF THE ARCHIVES OF MANITOBA, WINNIPEG STREETS, 1-1 (N5774)

village containing about 200 settlers. Now, Winnipeg is a city of over 6,000 inhabitants.”

Women of Red River, a 1923 book of the recollections of women from the early days, notes that:

Among the events in the closing years of that decade was a cyclone in July 1868, which destroyed the half-built Holy Trinity Church in the village of Winnipeg. Mrs. [Kathleen] McLean, the wife of the Archdeacon, set us to work to help in rebuilding the church, said Mrs. Cowan [wife of Dr. Cowan, then acting governor of the Red River Colony]. I remember she assembled half a dozen of us at a sewing party. . . . When we had sewed until it was time to go home, Mrs. McLean, who had brought in candles, made us have tea, and presently the Archdeacon came in, and with him Bishop Machray. He presented the figure of a bashful bachelor who had not expected to be ushered into a roomful of women at tea. “My lord,” said the Archdeacon, “the ladies are building a church with their needles.” [Kathleen was 28 years old, with four children, in 1868.]

In the early days, Lower Fort Garry, which is about 30 kilometres north of Winnipeg, was commonly called the “Stone Fort.” An official government history of the Stone Fort reports that in 1869: “Some excitement was caused by Louis Riel’s visit to the quarters of Archdeacon McLean in the residence of the Stone Fort in his search for Dr. John Schultz, who had escaped custody at the Upper Fort [in central Winnipeg] January 23rd. . . . [Louis] Riel pushed into the Archdeacon’s bedroom, thinking Schultz might be the occupant, pulled the bedclothes roughly from the bed and frightened the Archdeacon nearly out of his wits.” A Parks Canada brochure advises that “the Anglican archdeacon . . . was a guest at the post.” Dr. Schultz was the acknowledged leader of the Canadian Party of Red River which opposed Riel’s provisional government.

The Western Métis, a collection of research papers, was edited by Patrick Douaud and published by the University of Regina in 2007. This book notes that Archdeacon John McLean testified at Ambroise Lépine’s trial in 1874. According to *The Western Métis*, McLean gave this account at the trial:



Bishop John McLean—in Toronto, circa 1874 at 46

[I] saw [Thomas] Scott one day, found him handcuffed and his legs ironed; asked him how he was and why he was there; he said he had some trouble with the guards; had some conversation with him about his spiritual wants and when I was coming away asked permission to call upon him again, but that night he was brought up, and on the following day he was shot; I was totally ignorant of his danger; I afterwards learned that that was the last day of his life. [Thomas Scott was executed on March 4, 1870.]

At the same 1874 trial of Lépine and “in the wake of the threatened execution of [Major] Charles Boulton [for treason], McLean told the court about the deal he and Donald Smith made with Riel to save Boulton’s life [to visit the Anglophone parishes and convince them to send representatives to the new provisional government].” Donald A. Smith was the chief Canadian commissioner to Red River at the time.

Louis Riel, a Métis, fought for the rights of people in the Red River Settlement, especially First Nations and French Métis, by leading a provisional government in 1869, which took control of the colony, but not Lower Fort Garry. He succeeded in getting important concessions, including land grants (discussed in Chapter 14), separate French schools and protection of Catholicism for the new province of Manitoba, when it entered Confederation on July 15, 1870.

Manitoba's population was almost 12,000 in 1870, when Winnipeg's headcount was only 215, according to the City of Winnipeg's online history. The new province was sometimes called the "postage stamp province" because it was initially little more than what had been the Red River Settlement. Eighty-seven percent of Manitoba's population was Aboriginal in 1870. The province's population when it joined Confederation, as the fifth province, on July 15, 1870, comprised: 1,563 people of European descent, 5,696 "French half breeds," 4,082 "English half breeds," and 560 First Nations people, according to the government's census taken in the fall of 1870.

The 1896 publication *The Bishops of the Church of England in Canada & Newfoundland* advises: "In 1871 the universities of Trinity College, Toronto and Bishop's College, Lennoxville, conferred on Archdeacon McLean the honorary degree of D.C.L. He also received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Kenyon College Gambier, Ohio." He was made an Honourary Fellow in 1877, and in 1881, received a Doctor of Divinity from St. John's College, which was then part of the University of Manitoba in Winnipeg. (Note: Some universities offer Doctor of Civil Law (D.C.L.) degrees instead of Doctor of Laws (LL.D.) degrees.)

McLean was chosen in 1874 to become the first Bishop of Saskatchewan. At the time, his diocese covered most of what is today



Kathleen McLean (Flood)

Alberta and Saskatchewan; an area of about 1.8 million square kilometres. McLean described his diocese as “a vast area containing about 30,000 Indians, with a few small settlements of white people No endowments, no missionaries, no churches.” On a visit to England, at Lambeth, John McLean was consecrated by the Archbishop of Canterbury and Primate of All England (the Most Reverend Archibald Campbell Tait), along with others, on May 3, 1874.

Throughout his 11 years in the diocese, he was an indefatigable traveller, covering the territory several times, baptising, marrying, confirming and even ordaining as he went. He travelled by boat, cart, wagon and dog team or cariole (pronounced *kar-e-ol*).

McLean’s son Denham wrote in the *Church Messenger* in September 1935 that:

There were no railroads and my father, in order to reach his diocese, had to undertake a journey of five hundred miles by dog-cariole in mid-winter, on his first trip through the diocese he covered two thousand miles with the thermometer often registering 40° below zero.

McLean’s first visit to his diocesan headquarters of Prince Albert was accomplished by dogsled in early 1875. At that time, “a trained [dog] team over hard, open country could make forty miles a day.” The 1896 Bishop’s publication reports:

On the morning of January 28th, 1875, Bishop McLean set out for his new home, leaving his wife and family [in Winnipeg] to go out in the following summer. It was quite a unique journey. The cariole in which he travelled was a light oak sled, with parchment sides, drawn by four trained dogs. The luggage and provisions were drawn on two sleds also by dogs. Three Indians accompanied him He held a series of confirmations and services along the route. Thus he journeyed for more than a thousand miles over trackless wastes of snow, sometimes on lakes, at others along the course of rivers, and again through the woods.

In his book, *A World We Have Lost, Saskatchewan Before 1905*, Bill Waiser noted that in the mid-1870s, the Prince Albert area had a population of 300. The majority were English Métis (Anglican or Scot Presbyterian) from Red River, following the 1869–1870 Red River Resistance. Waiser advised that by 1882, immigration from Ontario and Great Britain had transformed Prince Albert into a white community with a population of about 4,000, by far the largest community in what is now Saskatchewan. The town's prominence was quickly surpassed when the Canadian Pacific Railway completed a southern route that reached Calgary in 1883.

With the arrival of Bishop McLean in 1875, “the Church began to organize congregations amongst the many scattered settlements of white people, in addition to intensifying the missionary work amongst the Indians.” His first church was St. Mary's. St. Mary's Church, a small simple structure on the outskirts of Prince Albert, is rarely open to the public these days. This Anglican Church was opened by Bishop McLean on Christmas Day 1875 and is located at the west end of town. About 10 years after the little church was built, the current downtown of Prince Albert began to develop and, in 1884, The Cathedral Church of St. Alban the Martyr was built at 1410 Bishop McLean Crescent.

During his time as bishop, McLean also travelled a few times to England as well as to Eastern Canada to raise monies to operate his diocese. He was a highly successful fundraiser, known in church missionary circles in London, England, as the “Bishop of Catch-what-you-can.” In addition to increasing the diocesan endowment, he raised money for a college. McLean was convinced the church's college needed to provide training for Indigenous clergy as well as other higher education, “in spite of a prevailing depression,” according to McLean's son Denham.

In Ontario, John McLean's connections with the Hume-Blake families (Chapter 6) on his wife's side of the family, as well as his earlier work in Toronto and London, Ontario, were all very helpful. These connections not only provided direct contributions to fund McLean's work, but also served to open doors to other influential people. His family connections also helped him to secure a federal university charter for Emmanuel College in 1883.

Instruction began at Emmanuel College in the fall of 1879 beside St. Mary's Church in three log houses and the following summer a larger wood-framed building was complete. From the beginning, the emphasis was on an

Indigenous ministry and on Indigenous languages. As traditional arts subjects were added to the curriculum, so were courses in practical agriculture, especially for Indigenous people. Cree Bibles and prayer books were used in the diocese from the early days.

Historian and author Ruth Buck noted that “in the 1870s those doors [higher education] were still firmly barred to women students; and in all probability Bishop McLean would have agreed that education for them could serve no real purpose.”

John and Kathleen McLean had nine children:

Jessica (Jessie) Kathleen McLean

Born in London, Canada West, on January 31, 1862, Jessica married Rev. Ronald Hilton in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan, in August 1886. The couple had five children—Marjorie, Dorothy, Hume, Denham and Cedric. Ronald Hilton was born in Toronto on May 26, 1863, the son of the Rev. John Hilton. Ronald was ordained by Bishop McLean in 1886. Hilton served the church in Fort McLeod, in southwestern Alberta, before moving, about 1903, to Ladner, B.C., now a southern suburb of Metro Vancouver. He later moved to Seattle, with ministerial responsibilities. He was a chaplain with the Kootenay Battalion overseas in the First World War, before returning to serve as rector in the Seattle area. Ronald died in Seattle on August 1, 1924, at age 61. His wife, Jessie, died in Ladner five years later on April 13, 1929, at 67 years of age.

Frances (Fannie) Mary Blake McLean

Born in London, Canada West, on January 18, 1864, Frances married Rev. James Flett and died, at age 79, in Winnipeg on September 19, 1943. Her life is discussed in Chapter 15.

Wilhelmina (Winnie) Ann Brough McLean

Born March 5, 1865 in London, Canada West, Winnie married Archdeacon George McKay in Prince Albert, on October 31, 1888. She died in Sturgis, South Dakota, on November 5, 1947, at age 82. McKay was born in Fort Ellice in the Touchwood Hills, Northwest (i.e., western Canada), on May 25, 1854, and died, at age 95, in Sturgis on December 12, 1949.

George and Winnie had three sons—Laurence, Arthur and Norreys.

McKay's father was chief factor for the HBC's Fort Ellice. George graduated from St. John's College and attended Sydney Sussex College, Cambridge University, England, at about the same time as Robert Flett (Chapter 14). In 1897, Archdeacon McKay joined about thirty men, mostly from Winnipeg, including Hunter Young (Chapter 11), and travelled to the Yukon in search of gold. He was known to be able to shoot ducks, in flight, with a rifle.

Robert Machray McLean

Born in Winnipeg on July 14, 1867, Robert married Jennie M. McDiarmid in Gilby, North Dakota, on April 27, 1892, and died in Gilby on January 25, 1930. Gilby is 235 kilometres directly south of Winnipeg. Jennie was born in St. Stephen, New Brunswick, on March 17, 1869 and died in Gilby on June 7, 1961. Robert Machray McLean graduated from the University of Manitoba in medicine and pharmacy, and from the University of Chicago in surgery. He settled in Gilby to practice medicine and raise a family of five children—Florence, Lydia, Everett, Robert and Ian.

One of Dr. McLean's grandchildren was Marjorie Kathleen McLean, born in Gilby on April 3, 1931 to Pearl Alice (Larson) and Everett Gordon McLean. After graduating with a Bachelor of Arts from the University of North Dakota, in 1952, she married John Frederick (Jack) Kruger on June 11, 1954 in the Gilby Presbyterian Church. Jack was born in Fargo, North Dakota, on June 24, 1929 and received a Bachelor of Science from UND, became a CPA and, in 1956, graduated from the University of Michigan with a Juris Doctor degree. He practiced law as a partner with a Seattle law firm. Their Seattle-born children are: Julie McLean Kruger (b. February 10, 1958), Lisa Ellen Kruger (b. August 10, 1961) and John Frederick (Fritz) Kruger (b. June 30, 1965). Marge Kruger passed away, at 86 years of age, on March 6, 2018 in her Bellevue home.



Dr. Robert Machray McLean circa 1900.
COURTESY OF MARGE KRUGER

John Inglis McLean

Born in London, Ontario, and baptised in Winnipeg, August 24, 1869, John married Elizabeth Tikastenahakusin (circa 1878–April 28, 1937) in Little Red River in northern Alberta on September 24, 1895. John died in Fort Vermillion on October 21, 1933. John and Elizabeth had six children. Fort Vermillion is a hamlet in northern Alberta, located on the banks of the Peace River, 660 kilometres northwest of Edmonton.

Hume Blake McLean

Born in Winnipeg in August 1870, Hume was baptised there on December 3, 1871. Hume died, at 22 years of age, in Athabasca Landing on May 16, 1893. Athabasca Landing is now called Athabasca and it is located on the Athabasca River, 150 kilometres north of Edmonton. He is buried in the Edmonton Municipal Cemetery.

Florence Maude Dagmar McLean

Born in London, England (at the corner of Maude and Dagmar Roads in Southwark, London) on July 13, 1873, and baptised on August 16, 1873, Florence married Richard Samuel Cook in Prince Albert in 1891. Richard Cook was born circa 1860 in Peterborough, Ontario, and passed away, at age 48, on October 24, 1908 in Prince Albert. Richard's parents were Richard P. Cook (b. 1828, England), a carpenter and Esther Cook (b. 1830, England). Florence died in North Vancouver, at age 82, on July 15, 1955 and is buried in West Vancouver's Capilano View Cemetery. The couple had four children.

Denham Norreys (Fadge) McLean

Born in Prince Albert on May 22, 1877, Fadge married Emily Hart (Ame) Sage on September 6, 1899 in Lethbridge, Alberta. Ame was born in Crieff, Scotland, on November 9, 1877. Fadge and Ame McLean raised two children—Kathleen Lillias and Ronald Denham McLean. Throughout his working years, Fadge was a life underwriter. He died in his Edmonton home, at age 68, on March 30, 1946, and Ame passed away, at 87 years of age, on March 6, 1965 in Edmonton. Both are buried in the Edmonton Municipal Cemetery.

Allan McLean

Born in Prince Albert on August 29, 1886, Allan died, at 9 years of age, in Prince Albert on June 29, 1895. He is buried at St. Mary's Church Cemetery.

In the summer of 1883, John and Kathleen McLean travelled for two months leaving Prince Albert, and going first through Battleford, Saskatchewan to Edmonton, and then south to Fort Macleod, before they went east by train to Winnipeg. This trip included an important Synod meeting. By the time they returned to Prince Albert, they had travelled about 4,000 kilometres, including about 2,000 "in an open wagon, camping often at night by the trail." The buckboard was still the usual vehicle, but wagons with iron-rimmed wheels were starting to be seen, and so was the lighter democrat or democrat-wagon, with two spring seats and space at the back for luggage.

In a September 1884 letter, Jessie McLean reported to her friend Lillian in England, that Fannie Flett (Chapter 15), her immediate younger sister, had had her second child, a boy (the first was a girl). Fannie's children were the McLeans' first grandchildren. Jessie also noted that her sister Winnie was away for the winter in London, Ontario, where her mom's family, the Floods



John McLean

lived (Chapter 6). Jessie said: “I dread to think of the winter without Winnie but she was so pulled down when she returned that she had to be taken away.” Only three months later, Jessie reported in another letter, that Winnie was having a lot of fun in London and had extended her stay to autumn.

In a December 2, 1884 letter, Jessie, at 22 years old, commented to her friend in England about the weather during a recent cold snap at the end of November, writing: “The Sunday before last it was 50°F below zero and we were nearly frozen in [St. Mary’s] Church. I play the organ and there was not the slightest particle of feeling in my hands and feet. There was an inch thick frost on the organ keys. The big box stoves were nearly red hot, so you can imagine how cold it was.”

In the December 2, 1884 letter, Jessie related to her English friend another experience in travelling in winter with her father, noting: “You would be perfectly horrified if you could have seen the places we camped in at nights. They are the mail stopping-places, and are put up in the roughest way, merely consisting of one-roomed establishments, some of them with mud floors and no windows, but there was always a stove, and after driving all day in the cold, these places seemed like palaces in our eyes for the time being.” Jessie also noted that her brothers Robert (17) and John (15) and sister Maude (11) had gone to Winnipeg to attend St. John’s College School.

At the Bishop’s last Synod, held in August 1886, McLean reported that the total number of clergy employed in his diocese was 22. He started out with two employees in 1875.

McLean’s eldest daughter, Jessie, married Ronald Hilton only a few weeks before her father’s accidental death in November 1886. Jessie noted in an 1887 letter, that she and her husband had left Prince Albert on January 5, 1887 to return to their home in Fort MacLeod, Alberta, and for “most of the journey, it was 60°F below zero.”

The following is an excerpt from Bishop McLean’s 1886 diary:

Monday, September 6—I did not feel well today, but started on our return journey. On going down the hill near the fort we met a cart, and, there being no room to pass, our waggon was upset, and we were all thrown out. We, however, proceeded on our journey soon after; but I became seriously ill, and after proceeding five miles we returned to Edmonton, where I lay for three weeks at the Ross Hotel

under medical charge. I became very ill and very weak; I sent our team back to Calgary on the second day.

By the doctor's advice, I had a large skiff built by the Hudson's Bay Company, with the stern part covered with canvas like a tent. Two men were engaged to conduct it to Prince Albert, a distance of six hundred miles by water. We reached Fort Pitt on Thursday, October 7, exactly eight days from Edmonton, which we left on September 29.

Hume [his son] gave great help in working the skiff, and was most kind and attentive to me, both at the hotel and in the skiff. I continued very weak until we reached Fort Pitt. During the last two days I have been feeling much better, and am now writing up this note-book in the wood on the river bank, where we have taken refuge from a cold head-wind. Our progress is slow; we may have snow and ice in a day or two. I think of going overland from Battleford.

Below is commentary written in 1897 by McLean's close friend Reverend William Newton, Honourable Canon of Saskatchewan:

The Bishop was so ill when he reached Battleford [Saskatchewan] that he was obliged to remain in the skiff, and his son Hume feared that he would not live until he reached Prince Albert. The weather was bitterly cold, ice having begun to form on the river; however, the men worked very hard, assisted by Hume, a lad of fifteen, who did all he could for his beloved father, whom he described as so sweet and patient in all his pain and weakness. He was constantly singing to himself during the weary hours of night. This dear son, Hume Blake, died at Athabasca Landing, May 16, 1893, in his twenty-second year.

After the Bishop's return home he rallied considerably for a few days, but he was too much weakened by the hardships of the journey. Fever set in; he was delirious at times, but even in his wanderings his beloved diocese occupied his thoughts, and at times he imagined himself conducting meetings with his clergy.

On Saturday afternoon, November 6, he spoke in the most eloquent manner of the future of the diocese; then he kissed all his loved ones, and shook hands with others who were with him. As the

sun was setting, he asked his daughter, Mrs. Flett, to help him to sit up, and had the blinds drawn up so that he could see the sunset; then he said: "Do bring lights; it is growing very dark."

From that time he spoke but little, but appeared to be in a sort of stupor, from which he was roused to take stimulants. About 5 a.m. on Sunday morning his wife was standing beside him, and he said to her: "My lips are getting so stiff;" and then he kissed her, with loving words of all they had been to each other. He did not speak coherently after that, but became unconscious, and remained so, surrounded by all his family, until 12 a.m., when he fell asleep like a little child.

John McLean is buried outside the chancel window in St. Mary's Church Cemetery, facing the congregation, as was his wish. His monument bears the inscription:

Entered into the rest of Paradise, November 7, 1886, John McLean the first Bishop of Saskatchewan in his 58th year. I believe in the Communion of Saints.

An obituary in the *Prince Albert and Saskatchewan Review*, November 19, 1886, includes the following comments about the bishop:

He was distinguished for activity and zeal, for perseverance and strength of mind. The duties and cares appertaining to such a vast district as this diocese of Saskatchewan—embracing as it did scattered people, totally distinct in race, in language, and in civilization—were neither few nor small, and the Bishop was not more than others exempt from disappointments and discouragements, but he met and overcame difficulties and annoyances with admirable courage and with a coolness and equality of temper superior to most men.

He had also great talent for organization and in the arrangement of details, and in the large correspondence naturally entailed upon him, he was methodical and painstaking in a high degree. Few men in any country have travelled further and undergone greater labours in organizing and regulating and visiting in the way of duty.

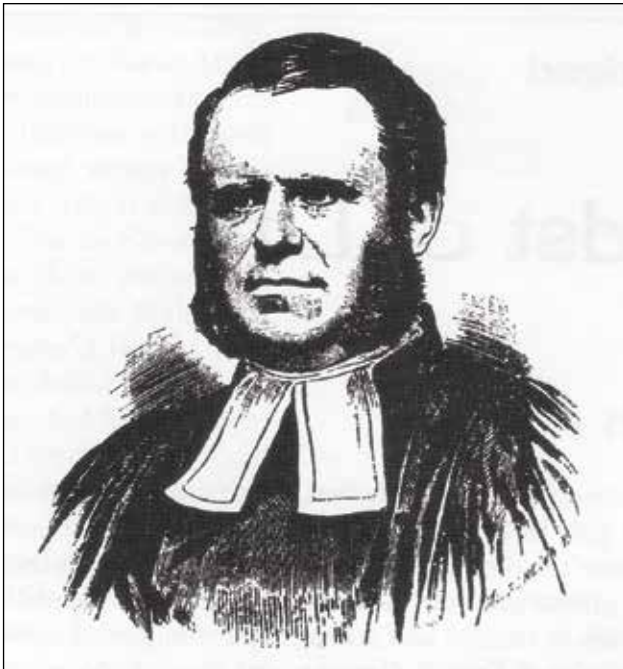
In the highest sense of the term the Bishop was public-oriented—he

was at all times ready and willing to aid good public measures; but with the wisdom that characterized all his doings he avoided controversy; and though fully conversant with political affairs he prudently stood aloof from party strife. He was also conspicuous for his loyalty.

. . . The land of his adoption was the land of his love—his whole thoughts and efforts were directed to the good of those whom he laboured and he devoted his great abilities, his energy and his life to promote their highest interests.

Kathleen McLean remained on the property near St. Mary's Church after her husband's death. Bishop McLean had purchased 64 acres of land "from his own private account" before his death. A large wooden house was built for her. This house was later moved and still stands at 735 – 15th Street West, Prince Albert.

Church records show that Kathleen McLean died, at 57 years of age, in Prince Albert on December 12 and was buried on December 15, 1897. John and Kathleen McLean are buried in Part 1, Plot 45 in St. Mary's Cemetery.



Bishop John McLean. REPRODUCED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CANADA'S NATIONAL HISTORY SOCIETY, PUBLISHER OF CANADA'S HISTORY MAGAZINE

In 1954, McLean Islands in Lake Athabasca were named in honour of the Bishop.

In May 2009, the current Bishop of Saskatchewan, Michael Hawkins, advised me that “Bishop McLean still looms large and as his successor I have found much inspiration and encouragement in his ministry and example.” Bishop Hawkins also noted that he had “gone out to visit Bishop McLean’s grave last fall on the anniversary of his death.”

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this family is related to the author’s family:

1. John McLean married Lilly Cameron
2. Charles McLean married Jannet Watson
3. John McLean married Kathleen Flood
4. Frances Mary Blake McLean married James Flett
5. Frances Mary Blake Flett married Walter Young
6. Hume Blake Young married Elinor Hopper
7. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
8. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
9. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Hopper Family

Daniel Hopper (circa 1765–circa 1842) and Miss McCartney

My fourth great-grandfather Daniel (Denny) Hopper is reported to have been born circa 1765 in the townland of Armalughey (also Armaloughy), located immediately east of the village of Ballygawley in County Tyrone. Ballygawley is about 90 kilometres west of Belfast. Some Hopper family members describe Ballyreagh as the location of the family's 18th-century roots. Ballyreagh is a townland, comprising 96 hectares, located three kilometres northeast of Ballygawley.

County Tyrone is the largest county in Northern Ireland, and its western border adjoins Ireland. The flat peatlands of East Tyrone border the shoreline of the largest lake in the British Isles, Lough Neagh. The highest point in Tyrone is Sperrin Mountain at 700 metres. Agriculture has always played a central role in the economy and life of County Tyrone.

Denny Hopper and his wife, unknown McCartney, are said to have had six children, all born in County Tyrone:

- Margaret Hopper, b. June 1787 Ballygawley
- David Hopper, b. August 5, 1790 Ballygawley (my third great-grandfather, see below)
- Samuel Hopper, (1793 Ballygawley–November 14, 1862)
- Thomas Hopper, b. November 1796 Ballygawley

- Andrew Hopper, (October 1800 Tullyvannon–April 16, 1886 Kent, Ontario)
- Margery Hopper, (October 1803 Tullyvannon–1842 New Hamilton, Pennsylvania, U.S.A.)

Tullyvannon is a townland of 450 acres in the historic barony of Dungannon Lower. Dungannon is roughly 20 kilometres east of Ballygawley.

The current minister of the Ballygawley Presbyterian Church is able to confirm that Hopper family members were active in the church in the 19th century. Unfortunately, as their records start in 1841, the church is unable to confirm my Hopper family's information before that time.

Daniel Hopper is believed to have died in Tullyvannon around 1842, at age 77.

David Hopper (1790–1860) and Isabella Marshall (circa 1794–1879)

It Happened in Ellengowan is a book authored in 2000 by Mary I. MacKay. Ellengowan was a small hamlet in Brant Township, Bruce County, Ontario, about 200 kilometres northwest of Toronto. Ellengowan had a population of less than 100 at its peak. David Hopper and his family were among the earliest families to settle in this area of Bruce County in 1854. Mrs. MacKay provided a detailed history of Ellengowan and its early settlers, including much of the information we know of David Hopper's family, as well as that of his son John. The former hamlet of Ellengowan has now reverted to farmland, but still shows as a point on Google Earth.

David Hopper was born on August 5, 1790, and his wife, Isabella Marshall, was born around 1794. David and Isabella were both from the Ballygawley area of County Tyrone, where the couple married. David and Isabella's gravestones confirm that both are natives of County Tyrone, in what is now Northern Ireland.

1845 was the height of the potato famine in Ireland, and that year, half the potato crop never developed and much of the rest rotted after digging. The early winter months of 1846 were very severe. Likely out of necessity, David and Isabella Hopper and their family boarded a ship for a six-week ocean trip bound for Canada in the spring of 1846. They settled near Huntingdon, Canada East. Their children ranged in age from 13 to 26. Huntingdon is 75 kilometres southwest of Montreal near the American border, and not far from

Cornwall, Canada West. The family stayed in this area for eight years, until they heard about “free” land in Bruce County, and moved to Canada West. David and Isabella’s five oldest children were married in the Huntingdon area.

The 1851 census for Quebec East confirms that David Hopper (62), Isabella Marshall and four of their adult children were living in the hamlet of Hinchinbrooke, eight kilometres southeast of Huntington. David’s occupation is listed as “merchant.”

In 1854, David (64), Isabella (60) and their grown family settled on the east side of Elora Road, Lot 1, Concession 14, Brant Township, about two kilometres from the Elderslie-Brant boundary, where the hamlet of Ellengowan began. The entire family moved to what became Ellengowan, except for son Daniel, who moved to Toronto and became a storekeeper. With the help of his sons, David cleared the land, built a house and met the requirements to receive title to his farm on November 23, 1859. David died the following year, at age 70, on September 7, 1860.

Isabella managed the farm with her sons Thomas and David after her husband’s death. She maintained ownership of the house and farm for her son David (1830–1910), until his marriage in 1866 to Annie Falconer (1848–1933). After her son’s marriage, Isabella lived with her oldest daughter, Jane Saddler.

Robert Saddler (March 1815–May 14, 1890) and Jane Hopper (1820–1893) had no children, owned and farmed tobacco on Lot 26, Concession B, and were members of the Anglican Church. Robert Saddler was born in Cavan, Ulster, Ireland.

David and Isabella Hopper’s children were:

- Jane Hopper—(March 1820–May 30, 1893)
- Daniel Hopper—b. circa 1821; had three children; the 1871 Canadian census reports he was “50, a storekeeper in the district of Toronto West and sub-district of St. Patrick’s Ward and a Canadian Presbyterian”
- Allan Hopper—(July 22, 1822–March 31, 1888); married Elizabeth Jane Colter (1833–1892); the couple had nine children
- John Hopper—my great-great-grandfather, see below
- Samuel Hopper—(1828–February 5, 1891); married Ellen (Ellenor) Graham (1830–November 6, 1908) in Canada East; they

had seven children; their youngest daughter was Eleanor (“Ella”) (1872–1949); Samuel is buried in Douglas Hill Cemetery

- Marjory Hopper—b. June 1, 1830; was a twin to David; married Sam Fleming (1832–1903) (born in Ontario, of Irish descent); kept the Ellengowan hotel and later retired to nearby Paisley; no children; the 1871 census notes the couple were Presbyterian
- David Hopper—(June 1, 1830–March 1, 1910); “was brought up an Episcopalian in Ireland but in Canada, he became connected with the Presbyterian Church;” they had nine children; “he enjoyed his prosperity quietly and was widely respected for his sincerity, sound integrity, and kindness of disposition;” buried in Starkvale Cemetery, Paisley, Bruce County
- Thomas Hopper—(October 24, 1833–February 16, 1894); married Catherine Munro (1840–1913); they had eight children; “was widely known and respected;” Presbyterian; Thomas is buried in Douglas Hill Cemetery, Eden Grove, Bruce County

Isabella Hopper (Marshall) died, at 85 years of age, on July 9, 1879. Both David and Isabella are buried at Douglas Hill Cemetery, Eden Grove, Bruce County.

John Hopper (1827–1897) and Mary Jane McWilliams (1832–1922)

David and Isabella’s son John Hopper was born on February 28, 1827 in County Tyrone. Mary Jane McWilliams was born in Lower Canada on September 1, 1832, and married John Hopper on September 20, 1849 in Huntingdon, Canada East. My great-great-grandparents John and Mary Jane Hopper and their first two children, Isabel (4) and David (2), moved to Ellengowan in 1854, before their son John Alexander was born in Paisley, Bruce County, on September 18, 1854.

John settled on the west side of Elora Road, Lot 31, Concession B. He cleared a small piece of land and built a one-and-a-half-storey log house. By 1857, he had a license to operate a tavern, and in 1858, he became the first postmaster of Ellengowan. Mail was picked up from Walkerton and delivered daily. Today’s website for Bruce County confirms that Ellengowan’s “post office opened in 1858, and its first postmaster was John Hopper.”

John (34) and Mary Jane (28) Hopper are listed in the 1861 Canada

West census for the township of Brant in Bruce County. John is listed as an “inn keeper and farmer” and the couple is recorded as living in a log house (one-and-a-half-storey) with four children: Isabella E. Hopper (10), born Canada East; David A. Hopper (8), born in Canada East; John A. Hopper (6), born in Canada West; and Mary Jane Hopper (5), born in Canada West.

In 1863, John purchased the adjoining farm, Lot 30 of Elderslie Township.

The 1871 census shows the John Hopper family was living in the sub-district of Brant in Bruce south district. John (44) and Mary Jane (38) had eight children. John is recorded as a farmer, and Mary Jane as Irish.

In 1879, very likely after John’s mother, Isabella, died in July, John and Mary Jane sold their farm and moved to Kildonan, Manitoba, with their 10 children, who then ranged in age from seven to 27. The two oldest children were married.

By the 1881 census, John (54) and Mary Jane (48) Hopper were living in St. Paul in the district of Lisgar, Manitoba, and John continued to work as a farmer. The couple was living with their youngest five children.

By the April 1891 census, John and Mary Jane continued to earn a living farming in the Lisgar district. Lisgar district (#6) in 1891 included Kildonan, Gimli and Selkirk. The children living with them were Robert James (26) and Nellie (Catherine) (19). By the 1901 census, Mary Jane was 68, widowed and living in Brandon, Manitoba, with her son David Allen and his family.

John and Mary Jane Hopper’s 11 children were:

- Isabel (Bella) Elizabeth Hopper—born on July 9, 1850, married Charles Edward Langill on December 31, 1875 in Brant County, Ontario; Charles was born in Nova Scotia about 1845; Bella died on February 1, 1915.
- John McWilliams Hopper (November 29, 1851–January 5, 1852)
- David Allen Hopper (October 29, 1852–December 21, 1917); married Margaret Jane Hannah (b. 1855) on January 12, 1875; their children were: John Gilbert (May 6, 1876–October 1, 1941); William George (March 31, 1878–October 25, 1943), Minnie Jane Stark (October 12, 1880–October 26, 1964), Ellerton Simpson (b. April 11, 1883); Gertrude Louise (April 21, 1885–June 15, 1961). David Hopper was a school teacher.

- John Alexander Hopper (September 18, 1854–June 15, 1931) (my great-grandfather, see below)
- Mary Jane Hopper, b. October 25, 1856; married John Stark and they had two sons before John died. After his death, Mary Jane married George Davidson and lived in Deloraine in southwest Manitoba. Her sons, Lockert and John, moved to Chilliwack, British Columbia, about 100 kilometres east of Vancouver. She died on May 9, 1951.
- Marjory Ann Hopper (May 26, 1858–December 10, 1894)
- Sarah Ann Hopper (March 2, 1860–May 12, 1942); she married Norman Matheson on September 1, 1885 in St. Paul, Manitoba (February 16, 1850–September 20, 1926); their children were: Donald Fraser (August 11, 1886–June 16, 1909); John Gordon (March 5, 1888–December 9, 1952), Rupert Norman (May 12, 1889–January 15, 1962), Ruth (b. November 10, 1891) and Mary (b. October 6, 1893)
- Matilda Inman (“Maude”) Hopper (July 1, 1862–April 20, 1945); she married George F. Munroe in Kildonan, Manitoba on September 10, 1885
- Robert James Hopper (July 3, 1864–March 23, 1945 in Vancouver, B.C.); was a bank manager in Carmen, Manitoba; married with one daughter
- Samuel Thomas Hopper, b. April 1, 1867; 1901 Manitoba census shows he is married to Clara (22) with a 10-month-old Doris G. and living in Rapid City; later lived in Vancouver
- Catherine Ellen Hopper (September 19, 1871–January 18, 1940)

John Hopper died, at age 70, on December 8, 1897 and Mary Jane passed away, at 89 years of age, on April 27, 1922. Both John and Mary Jane died in Manitoba.

John Alexander Hopper (1854–1931) and Margaret Lowry Reid (1854–1925)

John and Mary Jane’s son John Alexander Hopper was born in Bruce County, Canada West, on September 18, 1854. He married Margaret (Maggie) Lowry

Reid on December 2, 1879 in Middlechurch. Today, Middlechurch is in the northeast corner of Winnipeg near the perimeter highway.

Margaret Reid was born on September 9, 1854. She and her family are believed to have come from the Coleraine area of Ireland. Coleraine is a city of about 24,000 today in County Londonderry, Northern Ireland, about 90 kilometres northwest of Belfast.

Margaret Reid's parents were John Reid and Margaret King. John was born in Ireland about 1804, and died in Strathclair, at age 84, on February 4, 1888. Margaret King was born in Ireland circa 1820, and died in Strathclair, at 69 years of age, on March 20, 1889. Strathclair is 250 kilometres west of Winnipeg.

John and Margaret Reid had seven children, and all were born in Ireland:



Circa 1917—L-R Maggie Hopper (Reid) at 63 and Mary Jane Hopper (McWilliams) at 85; Below—Maggie/Dean Hopper (23), Mary (24) & Ruth Matheson (26).

Samuel King (b. 1843), Jane (b. 1847), Joseph (b. 1849), Elizabeth (b. 1851), Margaret Lowry (or Lowery) (b. 1854), Annie (b. 1856) and John M (b. 1857). These birth years are based on the 1871 census. In this census, the family's religion is listed as Congressionalist; John (67) and Margaret (51) Reid are shown living in south Bruce County with their children.

The 1881 census for Paisley shows the Reid family—John (77), Margaret (61) and their daughter Annie (25)—were born in Ireland and that the family's origins are Scottish. Sometime after 1881, John and Margaret Reid relocated to Strathclair, most likely to live their final years with their daughter Margaret and son-in-law John Hopper.

John and Margaret Reid's farm was on Lot 9, Concession 13, Greenock Township, Bruce County. Greenock Township is immediately west of Brant Township, where the Hopper families lived. The Reid family had immigrated to Canada in 1866, as reported in the 1911 Manitoba census for Margaret Lowry Hopper (Reid) and her family.

At the time of the 1881 census, John and Margaret Hopper along with their five-month-old son Melverne, were farming in the sub-district of the Western Extension (also called Little Saskatchewan) of the Manitoba Extension. This census area is near the Little Saskatchewan River, located roughly 300 kilometres northwest of Winnipeg. The Western Extension is also about 60 kilometres north of Strathclair, where this Hopper family moved to about 1883. The western border of Manitoba was advanced to its present location in 1881, greatly expanding the size of the province from what it was when it entered Confederation in 1870.

On October 17, 1883, the Federal government granted John Alexander Hopper the "North East Quarter Section Thirteen [160 acres] in the Seventh Township in the Sixth Range East of the Principal Meridian in the Province of Manitoba."

In the 1891 census, the Hopper family is recorded as still farming in the Strathclair area of Manitoba, with John and Margaret living with five of their children. By 1895, the family had moved to a farm south of Newdale, after living for a short time in nearby Rapid City. At the time of the 1901 census, John and Margaret, along with their children Melverne, Joseph, Howard, Clark, Dean and Roy, were farming near Saskatchewan, Manitoba, about 25 kilometres southeast of Newdale. John Hopper was the census taker for his home area in 1901.



John and Maggie Hopper—circa 1910 at 56.

Except for Melverne, who is not recorded in the Manitoba government's birth records, John and Margaret's children are registered as born in or near various Manitoba rural municipalities that are located within 50 kilometres of one another, including Strathclair, Minnedosa, Newdale, Blanshard, Saskatchewan and Rapid City. All of these rural municipalities are about 250 kilometres west of Winnipeg.

For the 1906 Manitoba census, John and Margaret were living with their children Howard, Dean and Roy as well as a labourer, and farming in Newdale. At the time of the 1921 Manitoba census, John and Margaret Hopper, each age 65, were living in the municipality of Harrison, about 15 kilometres north of Newdale.

John's son, Clark Hopper, made an initial application to serve overseas

HOPPER FAMILY



Circa 1890 L-R Howard, Margaret, Mary, Joe, Melverne, Clark and John Hopper.

during World War One in February 1916. In this application, he listed his next of kin as his father, John A. Hopper, Jr., with a home address of 1813 Morton Avenue, in the west end of Vancouver, near English Bay and not far from Stanley Park. From 1917 to 1922, John worked as a school caretaker in Manitoba.

After Margaret Hopper's death, at age 70, on April 18, 1925 in Winnipeg, John "took up homestead at Carragana, Saskatchewan in 1927," according to a Newdale history prepared in 1970. Bob Hopper, Howard Hopper's son, has advised that this land was not farmed, but was used for beef cattle in the late 1940s. Carragana is northeast of Saskatoon, approaching the Manitoba border. John's eldest son, Melverne, and his family had moved to Carragana in 1927. John Alexander Hopper passed away on June 15, 1931, at age 76. At the time of his death, John was living with his son Clark Hopper and his family at 885 Corydon Avenue, Winnipeg. John and Maggie (Reid) Hopper are buried in Kildonan Presbyterian Cemetery in Winnipeg.

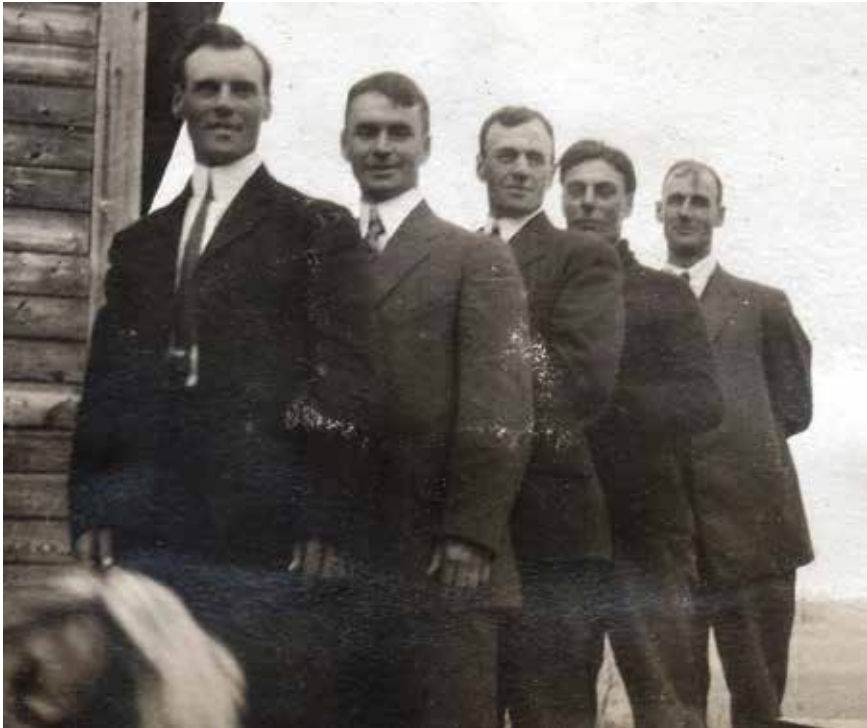
John and Margaret Hopper had seven children—five boys and two girls—as described below:

John Melverne Hopper

Born on December 17, 1880, Melverne married Pearl Fraser on December 4, 1907. The 1911 Canadian census records Melverne, 30, Pearl, 23, and Verna, listed as 2 years old. The couple eventually had six children. Pearl was born on September 24, 1887. Melverne died on April 13, 1950 and Pearl died on January 11, 1957.

Joseph Samuel Hopper

Born in Minnedosa, Manitoba, on June 28, 1882, Joseph married Sadie Fraser. Sadie was born November 19, 1889. The *Minnedosa Tribune* reported on November 22, that on November 13, 1917 in Newdale: “J. S. Hopper, a farmer here, was instantly killed this morning when his grain team ran away, being frightened by a freight train, the wheels of the loaded wagon, passed over his head, fracturing his skull.” He died at 35 years of age, was a “prominent Old Fellow” and left behind a “wife and three children.” The article noted that two brothers, Clark and Roy, were overseas. Both of these



1914 Newdale, Manitoba; L-R Howard, Clark, Joe, Roy and Melverne Hopper.

brothers returned home safely from the war, even though Clark was shot in the side of his head by a German sniper.

Mary (May) King Hopper

May was born on June 11, 1884 in Blanshard and died, at 12 years of age, from burns. May was singeing the pinfeathers off chickens, after they had been plucked when her clothing caught fire. Her burns became infected and led to her death. May passed away in Brandon on January 14, 1897.

Howard Langille Hopper

Born in Strathclair on December 2, 1885, Howard married his brother's widow, Sadie, on July 4, 1931. The couple had two boys, Robert and Kenneth. Sadie died on April 13, 1950 and Howard died on July 14, 1964. Howard initially farmed in the Newdale district of Manitoba, and later, bought grain throughout Manitoba and Saskatchewan. After that, he owned a farm in the Porcupine Hills area of Manitoba where he lived until his death. The Porcupine Hills run along the Manitoba/Saskatchewan border.

Clark Reid Hopper

Born on October 13, 1889 – Chapter 21 is dedicated to my grandfather Clark Hopper and his family. Manitoba Vital Statistics' records show Clark's middle name as Edington, but throughout his life, this name was Reid.

Maggie Dean Hopper

Maggie Dean Hopper was born in the rural municipality of Saskatchewan, Manitoba, on February 2, 1894. Though Maggie Dean is the name registered with the Manitoba government, she was known as Dean. At the time of her brother's death in 1917, the newspaper reported that she was living in Gainsboro, Saskatchewan. She married Malcolm Arnold Cameron on August 12, 1919, and they had four children. Cameron was born in Shoal Lake, Manitoba, on August 4, 1891. Dean was a school teacher in the Newdale area, as well as in Dropmore, where she lived until her death. Dropmore is about 400 kilometres northwest of Winnipeg. Dean died on August 13, 1965, and her husband died on March 31, 1967.

Robert (Roy) Milton Hopper

Roy was born on May 10, 1895 in Newdale. On December 28, 1921, Roy Hopper married Daisy May Cuthbert, sister of Eunice Cuthbert (Chapter 21), who married Roy's brother, Clark Hopper. Daisy Cuthbert was born on May 6, 1894 in Pilot Mound, Manitoba.

Roy graduated with a Bachelor of Science in agriculture from the University of Manitoba in 1916. His obituary notes that he also graduated from the University of Minnesota, where he may have obtained a master's degree in agriculture. The 1916 census for the tiny community of Macdonald, Manitoba, near Portage La Prairie, shows Daisy Cuthbert living as a boarder in a family home and working as a schoolteacher.



1916 (L-R) Roy and Clark Hopper

Roy Hopper's World War One service records with Library and Archives Canada show that Roy Hopper joined the 196th Battalion (University Battalion) as a private, served overseas and returned with the rank of lieutenant. He was not injured while overseas, but was hospitalized with rubella shortly after he arrived in England at the end of 1916. In April 1918, he was hospitalized for a couple of weeks in England for trench fever (a moderately serious disease transmitted by body lice).

Roy returned to Canada in March 1919, when he was formally "struck-off strength" (i.e., retired) from the army. He went on to work for the Soldier's Settlement Board. Roy later worked and lived in residence at the Brandon (Manitoba) Experimental Farm, where he remained for more than thirty-five years. Roy was superintendent of the Dominion Experimental Farm for many years. He retired about 1960.

Roy and Daisy were longtime members of St. Paul's United Church in Brandon. They moved to New Westminster, B.C. sometime after Roy's retirement. A 1965 voters' list shows Roy and Daisy living at 538 Richmond Street, New Westminster. Daisy died, at 73 years of age, in New Westminster on October 16, 1967.

Roy and Daisy's only child, Vivian Roberta Hopper, was living in New Westminster, when her parents moved to British Columbia. Vivian was born in Brandon on March 21, 1927, and married Thomas Foulton Maunders on August 5, 1950. Tom was born in Winnipeg on December 16, 1925, and died on March 27, 1992 in New Westminster, at age 66.

Vivian studied music for three years and obtained an Associate of the Toronto Conservatory of Music (ATCM) diploma. She also graduated from the University of Manitoba with a Bachelor of Science in home economics. Tom Maunders graduated with a Master of Social Work.

The 1949 Canadian government voters' list shows Vivian was living with her parents in Brandon as a student. The 1953 federal voters' list documents that Vivian, a teacher, and Tom, a social worker, were married and living at 262 King George Highway, Surrey, B.C. The 1965 Canadian voters' list records the couple was living at 830 Massey Street in New Westminster, and Tom was still a social worker. The 1972 federal voters' list records that they were in the same home as they were in 1965, with Tom continuing his work as a civil servant and Vivian working as a teacher. Vivian and Thomas Maunders had three children:

- James Robert Maunders, b. December 21, 1955
- Nancy Roberta Maunders (July 18 1958 New Westminister, B.C.– March 28, 2017 Victoria, B.C.)
- Donald Thomas Maunders, b. August 7, 1960

After Daisy's death, Roy married Nancy Mary Nixon on March 22, 1969. He passed away in New Westminister, at 84 years of age, on August 5, 1979. Both Daisy and Roy Hopper are buried in Fraser Cemetery, New Westminister.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How the Hopper family is related to the author's family:

1. Daniel Hopper married Unknown McCartney
2. David Hopper married Isabella Marshall
3. John Hopper married Mary Jane McWilliams
4. John A. Hopper married Margaret Reid
5. Clark Hopper married Eunice Cuthbert
6. Elinor Hopper married Hume Young
7. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
8. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
9. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Cuthbert Family

Peter Cuthbert (circa 1759–1842) and Elspet Dollas (1757–1834)

The Church of Scotland's records show that on October 6, 1781 my fourth great-grandparents: "Patrick Cuthbert in the parish of Keith and Elspet Dollas in this parish [Botriphnie] were this day matrimonially contracted in order to marriage Consigned Pledges for performance and married Oct. 20th, 1781." Patrick Cuthbert was known as Peter Cuthbert throughout his life. Peter and Elspet's marriage was in Botriphnie (now Drummuir), Banffshire. Botriphnie is 10 kilometres southwest of Keith.

The towns and villages mentioned below that are associated with my Cuthbert family in Scotland are generally within a 30-kilometre radius of Keith. Banffshire is roughly 250 kilometres north of Edinburgh. As a further geographic reference, Inverness is 100 kilometres west of Keith. The oldest part of Keith dates to 1180. Today, the town's population is 4,700, and it is surrounded by farmland. Keith is the start of Scotland's Malt Whiskey Trail, and has three distilleries. The headquarters for the producer of Chivas Regal is in Keith.

Parish registers record that Elspet Dollas was baptised in Botriphnie on August 18, 1757, and that her parents were John Dollas and Marjory Dow.

Peter Cuthbert's immediate family is less clear. Nonetheless, it is very likely that Peter's parents and my fifth great-grandparents were John Cuthbert and Janet Umphrey who married in Keith on August 26, 1742, according

to the Church of Scotland's records. John Cuthbert and Janet Umphrey had seven children, six of whom were baptised in Keith parish as follows:

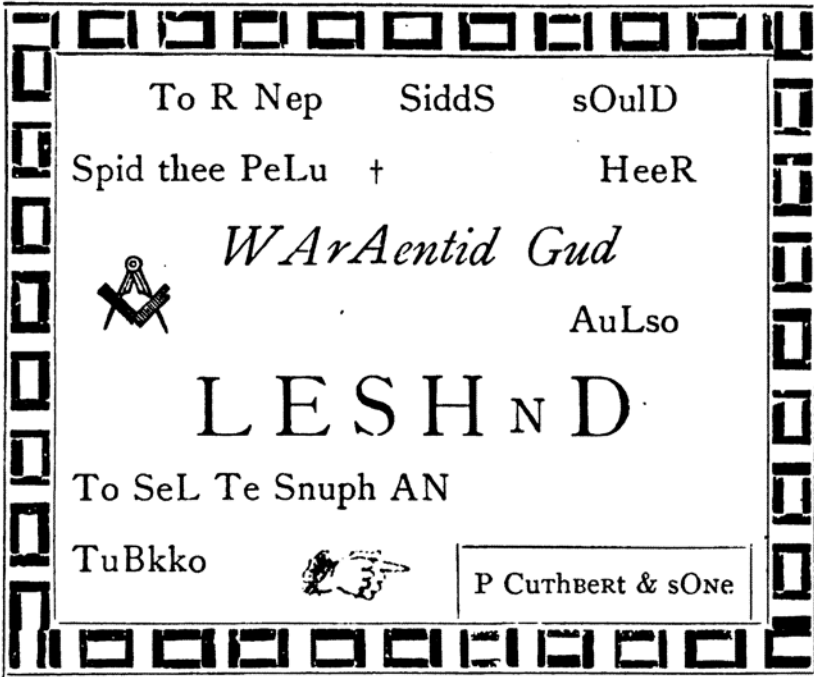
- Alexander Cuthbert, August 9, 1743
- Margaret Cuthbert, May 23, 1745
- James Cuthbert, June 18, 1747
- William Cuthbert, August 20, 1749
- John Cuthbert, November 17, 1751
- Patrick or Peter Cuthbert, baptism unknown, born circa 1759; my fourth great-grandfather
- Janet Cuthbert, March 22, 1761

The Church of Scotland's records are silent about Patrick's date of baptism and birth. While we don't know when or where Peter was born, we have the benefit of the 1841 Scottish census. Peter is listed in this census as a merchant on Mid Street in Keith. Curiously, enumerators were instructed to round down to the nearest five years. Peter is listed as 80 years old in the census which means that he could have actually been 80 or as old as 84. This, in turn, would place his year of birth from 1757 to 1761. As a result, I have chosen to use 1759 as his approximate year of birth.

Over the years, more than one Cuthbert descendant has mentioned Peter Cuthbert's reputation as a savvy merchant in a family history paper. His skills as a merchant are also referred to in *The Book of the Chronicles of KEITH, Grange, Ruthven, Cairney and Botriphnie*. The Reverend J.F.S. Gordon, D.D., of Glasgow, a Keith native, authored this 1880 publication. Below is part of the text that relates to Peter:

Peter Cuthbert's Original Trade Token

A diminutive primeval *Sign Board*, about 6 inches square . . . was exhibited in the small gable-window of the Warehouse of Peter Cuthbert & Son, Aquhorties, Upper Mid Street [in Keith] . . . our worthy "citizen of credit and renown" [Peter Cuthbert provided] the underneath Inscription, rather well ciphered with the end of a burned stick, *to wit*:



This sign is likely open to other worthy interpretations but can be said to read:

Turnip seeds sold here
 God speed the plough
 Warranted Good
 Also licensed to sell tea, snuff and tobacco

By including the Freemason's logo in his shop sign, Peter was advising potential customers that he is a member of a respected community organization and, by inference, he is reputable and trustworthy.

The Church of Scotland's baptism and burial records provide the following information for Peter and Elspet Cuthbert's nine children:

- Janet Cuthbert, baptised October 3, 1782
- John Cuthbert (December 27, 1783–May 15, 1844 Keith)
- Patrick James Cuthbert (baptised October 1, 1785—my third great-grandfather, see below)

- Mary Cuthbert (April 16, 1787–1866 Keith)
- Alexander Cuthbert (February 19, 1789–January 15, 1855 Keith)
- Elspet Cuthbert (November 24, 1790–1860 Huntly)
- James Cuthbert (September 4, 1792–December 10, 1852 Keith)
- William Cuthbert (April 27, 1794–September 3, 1852 Keith)
- Elizabeth Cuthbert (April 28, 1798–April 10, 1830 Keith)

Elspet Cuthbert (Dollas) died in New Keith on April 29, 1834, and was buried on May 2, 1834, at 76 years of age. Peter passed away in 1842, in his early to mid-eighties, and was buried on November 25. Both are buried in the Keith Old Cemetery.

Peter James Cuthbert (1785–1855) and Isobel Smith (circa 1790–1847)

Parish registers show that, like his father, Peter was named Patrick at birth on September 30, 1785 in New Keith but was known as Peter James. He was baptised the next day on October 1 in Keith. Witnesses were Patrick Dustan and Jean Umphrey, both of New Keith. The church's baptism record can be interpreted to say that Peter was baptised on October 31, but that ignores the chronological order of the page.

Peter's parents are recorded in the church register as Patrick Cuthbert and Elspet Dollas. Peter earned his living as a baker in Scotland and, after he immigrated to Canada, at age 51, he was a farmer.

Peter Cuthbert married Isobel (also Isabel) Smith in the parish of Keith of the Church of Scotland on February 11, 1809. Their banns were proclaimed on February 4. Isobel was born about 1790 in or near Keith. The exact date of Isobel's birth and the name of her parents are unclear to me as there were a number of Isobel/Isabel Smiths born in Keith about the same time.

The Church of Scotland's baptism records advise that Peter and Isobel Cuthbert's 10 children were:

- James Cuthbert (November 17, 1810–Oxford County, ON March 17, 1899)
- Alexander Cuthbert (February 1, 1813–February 8, 1870 Woodstock, ON)
- Peter Cuthbert (1815–Oxford County, ON May 24, 1903)

- John S. Cuthbert b. November 26, 1817—my great-great-grandfather, see below
- William Cuthbert (July 22, 1820–December 31, 1886 Oxford County, ON)
- Betty (Elizabeth) Cuthbert (February 16, 1823–October 18, 1920 Woodstock, ON)
- Charles Cuthbert (July 31, 1825–September 1, 1921 Woodstock, ON)
- George Cuthbert (August 15, 1827–November 21, 1903 Oxford County, ON)
- Robert Cuthbert (April 6, 1830–August 7, 1920 Brantford, ON)
- Andrew Cuthbert (December 21, 1833–November 1835 Keith)

Peter and Isobel Cuthbert's children were born in the towns the couple lived in at various times. James was born in Newmill, Alexander was born in Portsoy, and all the other children, except Andrew, were born in Fife Keith. Fife Keith is across the River Isla from Keith. Newmill is two kilometres north of Keith.

Their last son, Andrew, was born on a rented farm (called a “holding”) named Raemurrack, near the village of Cairnie in Aberdeenshire, between the towns of Huntly and Keith. Peter first rented Raemurrack in 1831. The church's register shows Andrew's birth was in the parish of Cairnie. Andrew was buried on November 12, 1835, just short of his second birthday, in the Keith Old Cemetery.

Peter (51) and Isobel (46) Cuthbert immigrated to Upper Canada from Aberdeenshire in 1836, sailing on the *Hercules* with their children, who ranged from six to 21 years old. Different sources report the family was at sea between nine and 12 weeks. Peter's eldest sons, James and Alexander, relocated to Upper Canada in 1835. Alexander is reported to have come to Canada a few weeks before James.

Peter settled in Oxford County, just south of the city of Woodstock, Upper Canada. Woodstock is 45 kilometres east of London. Because he arrived in late fall, Peter and his older sons built a log home there for the family to live in for the winter. While the log home was being built, Isobel and the younger children stayed in Brantford, about 50 kilometres away.

In 1838, Peter bought 33 acres in Lot 4, Concession 6 in West Oxford County, and shortly after, he purchased 157 acres across the road—Lot 21,

Concession 7 in East Oxford County. These thickly wooded lots were difficult to clear with only axes. Peter's (b. 1785) grandson has advised that in the early settlement days of Oxford County, "Wolves were plentiful. Sheep had to be penned away every night and the pens fastened."

Peter Cuthbert (65) is reported as a widower, Presbyterian and a farmer in the 1851 census for East Oxford County, along with his 21-year-old son, Robert, a labourer—both are shown as having been born in Keith, Scotland. Peter died, at 69 years of age, in Canada West on March 16, 1855. Isobel had predeceased him in Oxford County, at around 57 years of age, on October 7, 1847.

There is a Cuthbert Road in Oxford County, located just south of the village of Sweaburg, two lines south of Sweaburg Road. Cuthbert Road is named after this Cuthbert family.

John S. Cuthbert (1817–1912) and Catharine Cunningham (1831–1900)

The Church of Scotland's parish registers show that John was born in Fife Keith, Banffshire, on November 26 and was baptised on December 7, 1817. His parents are shown as Peter Cuthbert and Isobel Smith and witnesses to the birth were John and Betty Cuthbert, both of New Keith. It is unclear to me whether John had a middle name that started with the letter "S," but it has been repeated so often that it is commonly used in his full name.

John Cuthbert's wife was Catharine (also Catherine) Cunningham. Catharine was born on March 6, 1831. According to church records, John Cuthbert (27) and Catharine Cunningham (13) were married by Baptist Minister Edward Topping in Woodstock, Canada West, on January 17, 1845, a couple of months before Catharine's 14th birthday.

One of John's great-granddaughters has advised that John was "noted for his contribution to horse racing, and owned a clothing store and was a travelling salesman." John and Catharine Cuthbert lived and farmed on Lot 5, Concession 6, West Oxford Township.

Charles Peter Cunningham's family

Catharine Cunningham was the daughter of my third great-grandparents Charles Peter Cunningham and Sarah Stevens. Charles Peter's birth date is uncertain. Publicly available birth dates for Charles Peter Cunningham

CUTHBERT FAMILY



Catharine and John Cuthbert. COURTESY OF JANE CURTIS

vary from 1794 to as early as June 10, 1788 in Rutland, Rutland County, Vermont. He is the son of Elijah Cunningham (March 18, 1759–1837) and Mary Ward (1760–1838). Elijah was born in Groton, New London County, Connecticut, and his parents were John Cunningham (1737–1800) and Hannah Lester.

Groton and New London are 150 kilometres southwest of Boston. They were important shipbuilding communities, and later, whaling ports in the 18th and 19th centuries.

John Cunningham was also born in Groton, Connecticut about 1737, and he died, at age 63, on October 7, 1800 in Hunteerton, Chittenden County, Vermont. Chittenden is 300 kilometres northwest of Boston and 12 kilometres north of Rutland.

Sarah Stevens was born on January 20, 1795 in Black River, Berkshire, Massachusetts. Sarah's parents and my fourth great-grandparents were Abraham Stevens (circa 1774–1839) and Ruth Andrus/Andrews (circa 1776–1857). Abraham and Ruth were married in Guilford, Vermont, on April 17,

1794, according to Vermont state records. Abraham Stevens and his family lived in Rutland, Jefferson County, New York, at the time of the 1810, 1820 and 1830 censuses. In 1855, Ruth Stevens was living with one of her sons and his family in Watertown, New York, according to a New York state census.

As described in Chapter 19, from its origins in the first half of the 19th century, Oxford County was originally a successful Quaker settlement, populated with people from New England.

Charles Peter and Sarah Cunningham's first three children were born in America, likely in Rutland, Jefferson County, New York, where the couple married on July 25, 1818. These children were:

- Clark Cunningham, b. November 9, 1819
- Seymour Cunningham, b. March 3, 1821
- Mary Polly Cunningham, b. March 21, 1823

The family moved to Oxford County, Upper Canada, around 1824 where five more children were born:

- Hannah Cunningham, b. March 1, 1825
- Ward Cunningham, b. March 26, 1827
- Seviah Cunningham, b. October 16, 1829
- Catharine Cunningham, b. March 6, 1831
- Charles Cunningham, b. November 17, 1832

The 1861, 1871 and 1891 Ontario censuses confirm that Catharine was born in Ontario.

According to Hazel Dudley, a descendent of Charles Peter and Sarah Cunningham, Charles Peter and his family joined [or decided to join] the Mormon Church while living in Oxford County. Charles Peter's wife, Sarah, died in 1837, and on January 25, 1838, Charles Peter married Lucy Welsh. Charles Peter, Lucy, and some, but it appears not all, of Charles Peter's children moved that year to join the "Saints" in Missouri.

When Charles Peter and Lucy Cunningham moved from Canada West to Missouri, it appears that three of Charles Peter's daughters (Mary Polly, Hannah and Catharine) remained in Oxford County. While this observation

CUTHBERT FAMILY

is speculative, it is supported by the fact that Catharine and two older sisters married in Canada West or in the nearby state of New York.

It seems likely that Catharine Cunningham's older sister Mary Polly, after her marriage to David Dickson, took in her younger sisters, Hannah (13) and Catharine (7), when their father remarried in 1838 and moved back to the United States.

Catharine's sister, Mary Polly Cunningham, married David Dickson (1810–1884), a Scot, in Oxford County, on October 20, 1837, according to the London/Middlesex District Marriage Register, Archives of Ontario. Their first child, David, was born in Canada West, on August 22, 1838, when Mary Polly was 15. David Dickson was 13 years older than his wife. The Dicksons lived in Oxford County for about a dozen years before moving to the U.S.

In 1844, Catharine's sister, Hannah Cunningham (1825–1891), married John Peck Andrews (1819–1868) and her second marriage was to Nathan Egbert Humphrey. Both marriages were in Erie County, New York, not far from the Canadian border. Nathan was born in 1818 in Bangall, Dutchess County, New York.

Charles Peter and Lucy Cunningham, after they were persecuted in Missouri, settled in Nauvoo, Illinois, about 1840 or 1841.



Charles Peter Cunningham and Mary Ann (Williams) Cunningham.

COURTESY OF THE SAN BERNARDINO SUN

Charles Peter Cunningham and Sarah Seeley (b. January 20, 1801) married in Nauvoo, Hancock County, Illinois, on July 25, 1842, according to Nauvoo Region's marriage records. I do not know the fate of Lucy Welsh or Sarah Seeley, but neither was with Charles Peter in Utah at the time of the 1850 census. It appears there may have been one or two children born, in total, to Lucy and Sarah.

The U.S. censuses for 1850, 1860, 1870 and 1880 provide a useful glimpse into Charles Peter Cunningham's life over his final 30 years.

Charles Peter Cunningham married Mary Ann Williams on June 12, 1850 in Council Point, Pottawattamie, Iowa, according to the Iowa Select Marriages Index.

Charles Peter's fourth wife, Mary Ann Williams, was born around 1828 in Wales, United Kingdom, according to the 1850 census. Both of her parents were born in Wales. Mary Ann was 22 in 1850, and because of the uncertainty, as noted above about his birth year, Mary Ann would have been up to 40 years younger than her husband. Perhaps not surprisingly, Charles Peter declared he was only 49 years old in the 1850 census for the Utah Territories, Utah. In 1850, Charles Peter and Mary Ann were living with three children from his prior marriages.

Charles Peter and Mary Ann had 10 children that were born between about 1852 and 1867. At the time of 1860 census, the Cunningham family was living in San Bernardino, California, with seven children, of whom one was likely from a prior relationship. The 1870 census for San Bernardino shows the couple with 10 children, ranging in age from 3 to 17, representing all the children they had together.

By the 1880 census, the Cunningham family had moved about 75 kilometres west of San Bernardino to Azusa in Los Angeles County. Charles Peter and Mary Ann were still living with six of their children, who ranged in age from 13 to 21. Charles Peter Cunningham died, at age 92, shortly after the census was taken on June 11, 1880. He is buried in Spadra Cemetery, Pomona, California.

Over his lifetime, Charles Peter fathered around 20 children who reached adulthood, with his four wives: Sarah Stevens, Lucy Welsh, Sarah Seeley and Mary Ann Williams.

Charles Peter Cunningham's declared occupations over the four censuses from 1850 to 1880 are curious. Every 10 years, he reported a different

vocation. His reported occupations are: 1850 “distiller,” 1860 “farmer,” 1870 “physician,” and for 1880, at 92 years of age, both he and his 52-year-old wife, Mary Ann, reported they were “stock raisers.” The 1866 San Bernardino voters’ list also records that Charles Peter Cunningham was a physician. The evidence suggests Charles Peter was a well-regarded, self-made doctor, without a formal medical education.

On November 14, 1938, *The San Bernardino Sun* reported that, “On July 20, 1851, a pioneer wagon train arrived at a Sycamore grove north of the present city of San Bernardino.” These Mormon travellers included Charles Peter and Mary Ann Cunningham. “Dr. Cunningham was the first physician in San Bernardino, taking care of births and ills of pioneers, as well as the Indians.”

**John Cuthbert (1817-1912) and Catharine Cuthbert (1831-1900),
continued**

John and Catharine Cuthbert’s 12 children were:

- **John Cuthbert**

John Cuthbert (January 20, 1846–January 27, 1923) (ex-Reeve of West Oxford) married Mary Jane Rice (December 12, 1853 Ontario–March 29, 1919 East Oxford County). John and Jane had six children.

- **Peter Cuthbert**

Peter (July 27, 1848–May 1, 1932) married Margaret (Maggie) Joss from Aberdeenshire, Scotland, on January 14, 1885. Maggie was born July 15, 1853 and died November 21, 1907. Peter and Maggie raised Peter’s brother, Seymour’s half-orphaned son, Clarence (b. November 17, 1889).

- **Charles William Cuthbert**

Charles (1850–1941) (see Chapter 20)

- **James Cuthbert**

James (1852–1902), my great-grandfather (see Chapter 20)

- **Andrew Cuthbert**

Andrew (1855–May 3, 1940) never married

- **Seymour Cuthbert**

Seymour (March 1, 1858 West Oxford County–March 20, 1928

Woodstock, Ontario). Seymour, a farmer, married Martha Jane Buckborough from Norwich, Ontario, on April 5, 1887. Seymour and Martha had two children. Martha passed away on September 6, 1890. Seymour Cuthbert married Mary Jane (Jennie) Wilson (January 4, 1871–November 14, 1934) of Oxford County on November 28, 1901. Seymour and Mary Jane had four children.

- **George W. Cuthbert**

George (circa April 1861–October 28, 1876); accidentally shot at 15 years old.

- **Candace Cuthbert**

Candace (July 27, 1863–November 10, 1943) married David Rice (October 16, 1856–1925) on May 24, 1880 and they lived in Sweaburg. They had one child, Charles Merton, who died on March 23, 1905. His gravestone states he was 21 years old, and was likely born on September 16, 1883.

- **Jane Cuthbert**

Jane (or Jennie) (circa 1865–1957) married Abram Eddy and lived in Sault Sainte Marie, Michigan. At one point, their address was 318 Court Street. They owned a prosperous grocery business.

- **Nettie May Cuthbert**

Nettie (October 1868 West Oxford–January 1946 Niagara Falls, NY) married her first cousin Carl Nathan Humphrey (1871–1959)



Jane Cuthbert & Abram Eddy and John & Catharine Cuthbert's four daughters (photos circa 1895). COURTESY OF JANE CURTIS

of Niagara Falls, New York, on September 18, 1892. Carl was the son of Catharine Cunningham's older sister Hannah. Carl was born in Concord, Erie County, New York, on February 9, 1871 and died on August 9, 1959 in Algona, Iowa.

Nettie and Carl had three children: Glen C. Humphrey (1894 New York–April 25, 1912 Niagara Falls, NY), Harold Gordon Humphrey (March 9, 1896 Woodstock, ON–March 15, 1983 Pompona Beach, FL) and Clarence Benjamin Humphrey (January 3, 1900 New York–1924 Niagara Falls, NY).

- **Robert Dudley Cuthbert**

Robert Dudley (July 6, 1871 Oxford County–April 2, 1956 Ontario) of Sweaburg married Airey May Brown on October 25, 1893 in Oxford County. Airey was born on April 27, 1873 in Ontario. Robert and Airey had a daughter, Muriel Cuthbert (b. May 19, 1897), who had a twin who died at an early age.

- **Annie Eliza Cuthbert**

Annie (January 5, 1874–1958) married Earl Hamilton Owen on January 2, 1899 in Oxford County. Earl was born April 26, 1873 in Boston, Erie County, New York, and died in 1930. Annie and Earl had three children: Winifred Owen (April 1899–1904), Elsworth Owen (b. 1902) and Paul H. Owen (b. 1913). The family lived in New York and Michigan.

In the 1851 census for West Oxford County, John and Catharine Cuthbert are listed with their four sons, age one to six years old. By the time of the 1861 census, John (43) and Catharine (30) Cuthbert and their seven children, ranging in age from one to 15, were living in a one-storey stone house, along with a 25-year old Scottish labourer. Their two eldest sons, John (15) and Peter (13), are listed as labourers. The 1871 census shows John (53) and Catharine (40) with nine children aged 3–23, and the four oldest sons (15–23) at home are listed as farmers.

The 1881 census shows the family's religion as the "Church of God," but they were back to being Presbyterian by 1891. In 1881, John (63) and Catharine (50) had five children at home ranging from 7 to 23 years. At the time of the 1891 census, John (73) and Catharine (60) were living on their farm with Nettie (23), Robert (19) and Annie (17). By the 1901 census, John

(83) was a widower, and living in West Oxford with his youngest son, Robert (29), and his family.

The *Woodstock Sentinel Review* reports that Catharine passed away after a lengthy and painful illness, and that during her lifetime, “She [Catharine] was always kind to the poor and sick, and many homes where her ministering hand has been felt [*sic*] during times of sickness and distress.” Catharine Cuthbert died on January 25, 1900, at age 68. Her death record notes that a doctor assessed Catharine’s cause of death as heart disease.

The 1911 census for Ontario records that John (93) was still living with his youngest son, Robert Dudley (41), and his family in Oxford County. The census confirms his religion as Presbyterian.

John S. Cuthbert died on February 5, 1912, at 94 years of age. John’s obituary in the February 6 edition of the *Woodstock Sentinel Review* reads, in part:

There passed away yesterday one of the oldest pioneer residents of West Oxford in the person of John Cuthbert who died at his home Lot 5, Con 6, West Oxford, at the age of 97 years [*sic*]. He was born in Aberdeenshire [*sic*], Scotland, and came to this country in 1836 when he served in the rebellion of 1836 and 1837. Six years later he cleared and made a home for himself in one of the finest farming sections of the county. He was widely known and well-liked by everyone who knew him.

John and Catharine are buried in the Sweaburg Cemetery, West Oxford Township.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this Cuthbert family is related to the author's family:

1. John Cuthbert married Janet Umphrey
2. Peter Cuthbert married Elspet Dollas
3. Peter James Cuthbert married Isobel Smith
4. John S. Cuthbert married Catharine Cunningham
5. James Cuthbert married Mary Burgess
6. Eunice Cuthbert married Clark Hopper
7. Elinor Hopper married Hume Young
8. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
9. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
10. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

Burgess Family

John Burgess (circa 1766–1850) and Margaret Irvine (circa 1784–circa 1848)

In 1805, my third great-grandparents John Burgess and Margaret Irvine married in the Church of Ireland's Diocese of Clogher, according to the Public Record Office of Northern Ireland. The Anglican Church's Diocese of Clogher includes the rural area on the border between Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland, including most of the counties of Fermanagh and Monaghan and much of southwest Ulster. John was likely born circa 1766 in County Fermanagh, and his father was Arthur Burgess.

County Fermanagh is one of six counties of what is today Northern Ireland, and has a population of about 62,000. Agriculture and tourism are two of the county's most important industries. The main types of farming in the area are beef, dairy, sheep, pigs and some poultry. Most of the agricultural land is used as grassland for grazing and for silage or hay. The largest town in County Fermanagh is Enniskillen, with a population of 14,000. Enniskillen is about 130 kilometres west of Belfast.

The names Irvine and Irvin are used by various past family members, at times, somewhat interchangeably. Also, Americans have preferred Irving. For this book, I use Irvine for those ancestors from Ireland and Irvin for those from England.

John Burgess' 1847 correspondence suggests his home was in Dairies,

but there is not a community with that name in County Fermanagh today. Nonetheless, in the civil parish of Devenish, there are two adjoining townlands about 10 kilometres northwest of Enniskillen called Dairies Little (74 acres) and Dairies Big (139 acres). It seems that John and Margaret Burgess had a dairy farm on these townlands.

John and Margaret Burgess had eight children:

- Mary Jane Burgess (1806–August 1, 1869)
- Jane Burgess (b. 1808)
- Eliza Burgess (b. 1810)
- Arthur Burgess (1812–April 9, 1873)
- Ann Burgess (1816–1890)
- John Irvine Burgess (1820–1890)—my great-great-grandfather, see below
- James G. Burgess (circa 1825–1904)
- Margaret Burgess (November 5, 1829 in Ireland–September 25, 1910 Gladstone, North Dakota)

All these children were born in County Fermanagh. Margaret Burgess' last child, Margaret, was born in 1829, twenty-four years after she married. If I assume she was 21 years old in 1805, Margaret would have been 45 years old when her youngest daughter arrived. This suggests Margaret was born circa 1784.

DNA connections

My DNA results provide a connection to an American family that is a mystery to me. Descendants of John Irvine Burgess (1847–1924), who lived in Kansas, U.S.A., believe their ancestor was a nephew of my great-great grandfather John Irvine Burgess (1820–1890) and a grandson of William Burgess. The limited Irish paper trail that I have had access to does not allow me to know how this occurred.

Derrins is a townland of 190 acres that, in the 18th and 19th centuries, was in County Fermanagh. The William Burgess (#1) family line referred to above is recorded in 1846, 1851 and 1868 marriage documents as farming in Derrins, 50 kilometres southeast of Enniskillen. The Public Record Office of Northern Ireland maintains lists of freeholders at the end of the

18th century. A freeholder was someone who owned or rented land and was eligible to vote. For 1788, Arthur Burgess is listed as a freeholder for Derrins, and for 1796, Arthur, William (#1) and John Burgess are listed as freeholders for Derrins.

As there was only one Arthur Burgess on the County Fermanagh voters' list in 1788, and he lived in the Derrins townland, I am confident that he was my fourth great-grandfather. Given the 18th-century voting information and my DNA results, while speculative, it seems that William and John Burgess were related, likely brothers. It appears that William Burgess (#1) and his descendants stayed and farmed on the Derrins townland, while John Burgess (circa 1766–1850), his brother, farmed on the Dairies townlands, 10 kilometres northwest of Enniskillen. I do not know the name of William Burgess' (#1) wife. Nonetheless, in light of my DNA match with his descendants, it is possible that Margaret Irvine (circa 1784–circa 1848), my third great-grandmother, may have married William Burgess (#1) when she was, say, 18 years of age, in 1802, had a son William (#2) in 1803 or 1804 and the father, William (#1), may have passed away at a young age, allowing Margaret to marry a second time to his brother John in 1805, when she was about 21 years old.

William Burgess (#2, circa 1803–circa 1850) married Jane Hurst (b. 1827) on September 10, 1846 in Cleenish Parish Church, Bellanaleck, County Fermanagh, when Jane was 19 years old. William and Jane Burgess' church marriage record notes that both William Burgess (#2) and his father, William Burgess (#1, died circa 1804), were farmers. Jane Burgess' (Hurst) husband, William Burgess (#2), died accidentally about 1850, and Jane married a second time, to John Breen, on September 9, 1851.

William (#2) and Jane Burgess had a son, John Irvine Burgess (1847–1924). Descendants of this John Irvine Burgess advise that he was named after his uncle, John Irvine Burgess, my great-great-grandfather. If the fathers of William Burgess (#2) and John Irvine Burgess (1820–1890) were brothers, as seems likely, William (#2) and this John Irvine Burgess would have been first cousins, and if these men shared the same mother (Margaret Irvine) as I have speculated above may have happened, they also would have been half-brothers.

As mentioned above, William Burgess' (#2) 1846 marriage record notes that his father was William Burgess (#1), while John Irvine Burgess'



John Irvine Burgess (1847–1924) and Margaret Wilson (1844–1922). COURTESY OF MARCIA MACHIN ANNAN

(1820–1890) January 1890 Ontario marriage record, discussed later in this chapter, lists his parents as “John and Margaret Burgess.”

In 1890, not long before John Irvine Burgess, Sr., died, John Irvine Burgess, the nephew, visited his namesake in Toronto, according to a family history written by a daughter of the American John Irvine Burgess.

The American John Irvine Burgess was born on June 14, 1847 near Enniskillen, County Fermanagh. He married Margaret Wilson on February 21, 1868 in Cleenish Parish Church, Bellanaleck. John and Margaret immigrated to America, arriving at the Port of New York on April 8, 1868. They raised a family of seven children on a Kansas farm. John Irvine Burgess died, at age 76, on March 14, 1924 in Wamego, Pottawatomie, Kansas, and he is buried in the Pleasant Hill Cemetery in Louisville, along with his wife and a son.

My Burgess family’s DNA connections remain unclear to me but, perhaps in the fullness of time, with access to a more complete paper trail, if it exists, or with better DNA analytic capability, this family’s lineage may be better understood.

John Burgess (circa 1766–1850) and Margaret Irvine (circa 1784–circa 1848), continued

In January 1847, at the height of the Potato Famine, John Burgess (circa 1766–1850) wrote a letter to his daughter Ann Broddy, who was living in Canada. Ann married William Broddy (1795–1871), a labourer from

Ireland. Below is an excerpt from that letter, describing the harsh reality that this 80-year-old man was witnessing in the country he loved:

Dear Ann

I am sorry to have to send you word that I am very uneasy, that I have not had any but one letter from you, which compels me to send you this. I have to inform you that we are all in good health. This is the lord's doing and demands gratitude on our part. If you should receive this letter you will be sorry to learn the awful state of this country. I must leave it to you to judge of it for to describe it to you as it is, is impossible. Ireland from shore to shore is in a state of the most abject destitution; the potatoes are done altogether; the people in general are starving; hundreds have died of hunger.

Murders and robberies are quite common; the cattle are stolen out of the barn; sheep and cattle are killed and skinned, and carried off the field; houses are broken into, and meal and oats carried away; there is not anything that can be eaten but is taken. We have our cows today but we cannot tell but this night we may lose them; every man that has cattle is in the same state and people have become quite bold and hardened. They say plainly they won't want while there is meat of any kind to be got. They are stealing whole stacks of corn out of the hay yard at night, and what looks worse there is scarcely one Roman Catholic, however poor he may be, that has not bought a gun or pistol. We expect awful times. God only knows when all this will end.

By 1850, most of John's children had immigrated to Canada West, and his wife, Margaret, had died between January 1847 and April 1850. John's son Arthur married Mary Balfour (1823–1914) on May 4, 1849 in Cleenish Parish Church (Anglican), Bellanaleck, County Fermanagh. Mary was born in Drumscollop Lane, County Fermanagh. When Arthur and Mary decided to immigrate to Canada the next year, John, at 84 years of age, decided he would go with them.

Sadly, John died at sea and was buried there in May or June of 1850, while immigrating on the ship, the *Mary Campbell*. The *Mary Campbell*, a 900-ton vessel, was carrying 205 passengers from Londonderry, Ireland

to Quebec City. John, Arthur and Mary Burgess are listed on this ship as passengers sailing from Strabane, a town 70 kilometres north of the Dairies townlands and about 20 kilometres south of Londonderry.

John Irvine Burgess (circa 1820–1890) and Nancy Irvin (1817–1874)

John Irvine Burgess was born in Ireland about 1820. John came to Canada West about 1843, where it appears he met Nancy Irvin in Toronto. Nancy was born in Preston, Lancashire, England, on March 24, 1817, and baptised on June 8, 1817 in St. Anne's Anglican Church.

My great-great-grandparents John Burgess and Nancy Irvin were married in Toronto, on October 22, 1845 by Reverend J. Hutchison of the Methodist Church. She is listed in the Ontario marriage register as Mary Irvin.

Nancy's parents and my third great-grandparents were Charles Irvin and Jane Taylor. Charles was a weaver by trade, as noted on Nancy's baptism record. The Heritage Mississauga website provides a history of "The Lost Village of Mount Charles," written by Matthew Wilkinson. The Mount Charles settlement was largely Irish Protestant, and was located at the western edge of today's Toronto Pearson International Airport. The narrative in the history on the Irvin family reads:

The community was also home to the Irvin brothers, Charles and William. Charles was a noted weaver while William was a carpenter and cabinetmaker. Charles' loom now resides in the Black Creek Pioneer Village's "Charles Irvin's Weaver Shop" along with a blanket woven by him in the 1840s. The brothers were noted to be of "sterling" character and widely read.

Charles and Jane Irvin were born about 1793 and 1795, respectively. Charles and Jane were married on May 3, 1816 in the Minster Church of St. John (Anglican) (formerly Church of St. John the Evangelical) in the centre of Preston, Lancashire, England. Their children were: Nancy Irvin (March 24, 1817–March 20, 1874), Ellen Irvin (circa 1819–1840), Charles Irvin (circa 1822–April 11, 1869), Christopher Irvin (January 1834–March 21, 1888) and John Irvin (June 12, 1837–February 8, 1901). The first three children were born in Preston, England, and the two younger children were born in Mount Charles.



Charles Irvin, circa 1870 (taken in Portage La Prairie, MB).

Jane passed away, at age 62, on May 23, 1857 and Charles died when he was 69, on June 28, 1862. Charles and Jane Irvin are buried in King's Cemetery, Mount Charles, Mississauga.

After initially living in Toronto, John and Nancy Burgess acquired a farm and raised their family near Norwich, Oxford County, Canada West. Norwich is about 150 kilometres southwest of Toronto. The local economy is largely agricultural.

In 1793, a United Empire Loyalist from Connecticut settled in the "Township of Oxford on the Thames." This township was later divided into North, West and East Oxford townships: East Oxford later became part of the township of Norwich. The original resourceful pioneers and those who followed them from the United States founded Norwich as one of the most successful Quaker settlements in Upper Canada.

At least one of John and Nancy Burgess' children, their eldest, was born in Toronto, in 1846, before they moved to Oxford County. A McGill University digital project records that John Burgess acquired 100 acres in

North Norwich, post office at Holbrook, on Concession I, Lot 27, in 1856. This was an additional parcel of farmland for the Burgess family.

In the 1861 Oxford County, Canada West census, John (41) and Nancy (44) Burgess are recorded with seven children, ranging in age from three to 15 years. John is listed as a farmer. In addition, John's brother James (35) is listed as single, a labourer and living with John's family.

When John Burgess was 54, Nancy died on March 20, 1874, just shy of her 57th birthday. Nancy is buried in the Pleasant View Cemetery, East Oxford County, Ontario, in the hamlet of Curries. Curries is 18 kilometres northeast of Norwich.

By the 1880s, John was living at least some of the time in West Toronto Junction, about 10 kilometres west of downtown Toronto. In addition, his daughter Ellen, who was an unmarried schoolteacher, was also living and working there.

John Burgess spent time in Manitoba over the years. In 1873, John went to Manitoba and bought land (Section 34-12-6) in the High Bluff area near Portage La Prairie, which is about 85 kilometres west of Winnipeg. A letter from John's daughter Ellen in March 1874 confirms that John had "received the whole of the deeds of Section 34." The north half of Section 34-12-6 was registered in Ellen Burgess' name. Another parcel (River Lot 25) was purchased nearby on August 9, 1879. Both of these properties were farmed



John and Nancy Burgess in 1871 (taken in Mitchell, Ontario, near Stratford).

by some of John's children. Farmland was available in Manitoba at little cost in the 1870s, but required hard work to clear the land and build a home.

Before the Canadian Pacific Railway connected Central Canada with Winnipeg in 1885, travel from Toronto to Manitoba was 2,000 kilometres through the United States. One route involved travel by ox- or horse-drawn cart/wagon southwest to Windsor/Detroit, then on to Grand Haven on the east side of Lake Michigan, then by boat to Milwaukee, then by train to St. Paul, Minnesota. The next 750-kilometre leg of the trip was travelled by ox- or horse-drawn wagon, or by train after 1878, to Winnipeg, and the last 85 kilometres could be completed by boat on the Assiniboine River from Winnipeg to Portage La Prairie. As described on the first page of Chapter 11, there was more than one way to make this journey west. Throughout the 1870s, new rail lines reduced this 2,000-kilometre journey from about three weeks to just a few days in less than a decade.

John Irvin, John Irvine Burgess' brother-in-law, who lived in Brampton, Ontario, was a "lumberman," as mentioned in John I. Burgess' September 1890 last will and testament. John I. Burgess is understood to have owned a part interest in a sawmill. It seems he may have invested in his brother-in-law's lumber business. Brampton is 35 kilometres northwest of West Toronto Junction.

John and Nancy Burgess had eight children:

Jennie Alcock (Burgess)

Jane Ann (Jennie) Burgess (1846–1918) was born in Toronto, on July 30, 1846. She married William George (Willie) Alcock on May 31, 1871. Willie was born on June 4, 1848 in Mitchell, Perth County, Canada West. Jennie and Willie moved to Manitoba from Ontario in June and July of 1871 (a 39-day "honeymoon" trip). The 1871 census shows Jennie worked as a music teacher before she married.

Jennie and Willie Alcock had 10 children:

- Ellen Irvine Alcock (April 2, 1872–January 17, 1935)
- William Dufferin Alcock (July 13, 1873–October 7, 1924)
- Beatrice Alcock (March 8, 1875–April 27, 1958)
- Ada Minetta Alcock (January 20, 1877–January 30, 1895)
- Annie Alcock (November 24, 1878–August 29, 1881)

BURGESS FAMILY

- Gertrude Alcock (August 7, 1880–April 14, 1954)
- Bertha Mabel Alcock (November 21, 1882–April 3, 1948)
- Ethel Lorena Alcock (May 29, 1884–November 14, 1963)
- Laurence Rutherford Alcock (March 30, 1886–September 23, 1968)
- Fredrick Temple Alcock (August 11, 1888–September 23, 1955)

Jennie and Willie's first child was born in High Bluff, Manitoba, the next four were born in or near Winnipeg, the next in High Bluff, the next three children were born in the rural municipality of North Cypress (100 kilometres west of High Bluff), and the last in Burnaby, B.C. The family moved to British Columbia about 1887, after the Canadian Pacific Railway's service had been extended to the west coast. The first passenger train arrived in what is now Metro Vancouver at Port Moody from Montreal, on July 4, 1886. All of these children lived and died in the Lower Mainland (southwest corner) of British Columbia.

After moving to British Columbia, the Alcocks first owned and operated a dairy farm located on what is today the northeast corner of Kingsway Avenue and Boundary Road in Burnaby, B.C. For context, the neighbouring city of Vancouver was incorporated in 1886 when its population was about 1,000. Several years later, the Alcock family moved about 20 kilometres east to a farm in Coquitlam, B.C., part of today's Metro Vancouver.

Willie also worked in areas other than farming. He helped survey the town of Vernon, B.C. and the Monashee rail line. He served as a conductor for a tramway that ran from New Westminster to Vancouver through Burnaby.



Burgess sisters—left, Jennie Alcock and Mary Cuthbert, right, Margaret Bailey, Ellen Burgess and Jennie Alcock. COURTESY OF RAE BAILEY



Willie and Jennie Alcock—above, May 31, 1871 and below, circa 1895. COURTESY OF TERRI ALCOCK



Jennie died, at age 72, on December 30, 1918 and Willie died, at 73, in Coquitlam, B.C. on May 21, 1922.

Ellen Burgess

Ellen Burgess (1847–1921) was a schoolteacher who remained single throughout her life. She was born in Oxford County, Canada West, on December 4, 1847. Before 1902, Ellen taught school in West Toronto Junction. Ellen Burgess moved from Ontario to live with her sister Mary

Cuthbert in Pilot Mound, Manitoba, shortly after Mary's husband died in 1902. The 1911 census reports that Ellen was living in the Portage La Prairie district with her sister Margaret Bailey and her family. By the time of the 1916 census, Ellen was again living in Pilot Mound with sister Mary.

Ellen Burgess was not popular with her niece Eunice Cuthbert (Chapter 21). Eunice advised in notes she prepared later in life that in 1915: "Aunt Ellen accused me of doing something of which I was not guilty. This was the third rather serious accusation she had made during her thirteen-year stay at our place, so I treated her with coolness from then on. She was altogether wrong on all three occasions." I expect that my grandmother's words are code to say she did not speak with her aunt again.

Ellen Burgess died, at 73 years of age, on November 13, 1921. She is buried in the McKenzie Cemetery in High Bluff.

John Burgess

John Irvine Burgess (1849–1926) first married Catherine Armstrong (1856–1881), but she died, at age 24, in High Bluff. John married a second time to Mary Salina Collier on December 25, 1883 in Portage La Prairie, Manitoba, and they lived in the Dale district, Manitoba. It is unclear to me if John's middle name is Irvine or Irvin.

John was born on July 25, 1849 in Seneca Township, Canada West. He died, at age 77, in High Bluff on September 2, 1926. Salina was born on March 1, 1864 in Glenelg Township, Canada West, and died, at 52 years of age, on August 6, 1916 in Boyne Lake, Alberta.

John and Salina Burgess had eight children:

- Ella Burgess (August 4, 1886–March 16, 1932)
- John Irvin Burgess (January 11, 1889–May 31, 1980)
- Arthur Fredrick Burgess (October 4, 1891–August 27, 1975)
- Mary Salina Burgess (b. September 29, 1893)
- Jean Lillian Burgess (April 10, 1897–February 24, 1971)
- William Collier Burgess (October 29, 1900–June 19, 1972)
- Blanche Mabel Burgess (September 9, 1903–March 19, 1976)
- Benjamin Raymond Burgess (October 30, 1906–April 7, 1965)



John Irvine Burgess—circa 1885

Margaret Bailey (Burgess)

Margaret (Maggie) Burgess (1851–1937) married Oscar Wesley Bailey on September 22, 1875, as part of a double marriage ceremony, alongside her sister Mary and her new husband James Cuthbert (Chapter 20) in Norwich, Ontario. Oscar Bailey was born in Ontario, on July 1, 1850. Oscar's parents were James Bailey (1811–1907) and Martha Lefler (1827–1897). Margaret Burgess was born in Hamilton, Canada West on February 12, 1851.

Margaret and Oscar Bailey's first two children were born in Ontario—Oscar Ernest Bailey (August 23, 1876–1952) was born in Ingersoll, Ontario, and Alice Maude Bailey (March 3, 1879–1951) was born in Woodstock, Ontario; the other two children were born in Manitoba: Elmer Bailey (1883–1939) and Walter Cameron Bailey (August 23, 1887–August 21, 1958).

Oscar Bailey, Sr., purchased the southwest section of 26-12-6 near High Bluff, and the family moved to Manitoba about 1880. This property was one mile north and two miles west of High Bluff. Oscar Bailey travelled to Britain for good breeding stock, especially workhorses to replace oxen. Bailey farmed, broke horses for saddle and farm use and raised cattle and sheep.

Oscar W. Bailey passed away on January 12, 1932, at age 81, and Margaret died when she was 86 years old, on November 27, 1937. Both are buried in the Presbyterian Cemetery, High Bluff.

Mary Cuthbert (Burgess)

My great-grandmother Mary Burgess (1852–1935) married James Cuthbert. Details of their lives are provided in Chapter 20. The 1921 Winnipeg census notes that Mary's father and mother were born in Ireland and England, respectively.

William Burgess

William Arthur Burgess (July 26, 1854–September 8, 1875) never married and died of typhoid, at 21 years of age. He is buried in Pleasant View Cemetery, East Oxford Township.

Eliza Burgess

Eliza (April 25, 1856–May 1857) died at 13 months of age. Her gravestone is in King's Cemetery, Mount Charles, Mississauga.

James G. Burgess

James (March 13, 1858–July 12, 1879) is buried at the McKenzie Cemetery in High Bluff.

On January 9, 1890, my great-great-grandfather John Irvine Burgess (69) married a second time to Annie Armour (Hunt) (68). Annie's parents were John and Susannah Hunt. Annie was born in Lincoln, England. At the time of this second marriage, performed by Methodist minister E.A. Stafford, the Ontario government's marriage record shows John's home town as West Toronto Junction, his parents as John and Margaret Burgess and his birthplace as Fermanagh, Ireland. The couple had been married for less than a year when John died.

John Irvine Burgess, Sr., died, at age 70, on November 26, 1890 in West Toronto Junction, and is buried in the Pleasant View Cemetery in East Oxford County, Ontario, where his first wife is interred.

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this Burgess family is related to the author's family:

1. Arthur Burgess
2. John Burgess married Margaret Irvine
3. John Irvine Burgess married Nancy Irvin
4. Mary Burgess married James Cuthbert
5. Eunice Cuthbert married Clark Hopper
6. Elinor Hopper married Hume Young
7. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
8. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
9. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Clark Young and Sophie Young (siblings)

James Cuthbert and Mary Burgess

My great-grandparents James Cuthbert (23) and Mary Burgess (22) (Chapter 19) married at her family's home near Norwich, Ontario, on September 25, 1875. This ceremony was a double marriage performed with Mary's sister, Margaret Burgess and Oscar Bailey. James Cuthbert (Chapter 18) was born on his parents' farm in West Oxford County, Canada West, on January 23, 1852. Mary Burgess was born at her family's home near Norwich, on December 20, 1852. Norwich and West Oxford County are about 40 kilometres and 60 kilometres east of London, respectively.

James and Mary Cuthbert moved to Manitoba, very shortly after their marriage in 1875, to farm in the High Bluff area of the Portage Creek district. Their first child was born in High Bluff in July 1876. High Bluff is 80 kilometres west of Winnipeg.

James had a close relationship with his brother Charles William Cuthbert who was born on May 1, 1850 near Woodstock, Canada West. Charlie married Margaret ("Maggie") Mitchell on January 1, 1871, in Bates, Missouri, and settled near High Bluff. Maggie was born in Kansas City, Missouri in 1853, and died in Manitoba on August 2, 1882. Charlie and Maggie had five children. After Maggie passed on, Charlie married a second time on December 18, 1883 in Portage La Prairie to Catherine Laycock (June 23, 1860 Ontario–April 1, 1946 Winnipeg). Charlie and Catherine also had five children.



James Cuthbert, circa 1900 (COURTESY OF JANE CURTIS) and Mary Burgess, circa 1915.

Charlie farmed in the High Bluff area for 10 years and then moved to Portage Creek in 1886. At the time of the 1881 census for Burnside, Marquette County, Charles and brother James and their families were farm neighbours and are listed beside one another on the census form.

Charlie served on his rural municipality's council in 1882, and as a school trustee for many years. He has been described as a "solid man of weight" with "a highly developed sense of humour." Charlie died, at 91 years of age, on October 6, 1941 in Portage La Prairie, Manitoba. Charlie Cuthbert's information from his time in Manitoba is from J.H. Metcalf's 1932 book, *The Tread of the Pioneers*.

In 1888, James and Mary Cuthbert bought a farm two kilometres north of Pilot Mound. Mary's father, John Irvine Burgess (Chapter 19), loaned the couple \$3,000 to help finance this purchase. This debt was cancelled as part of the settlement of Mary's share of her father's estate, after his death in 1890.

Pilot Mound is 200 kilometres southwest of Winnipeg, near the American border. It is an unincorporated farming village recognized as a local urban district that once held town status in Manitoba. It is located in the municipality of Louise. In 1881, a town site was chosen, on the slopes of a 116-foot high mound, a prominent landmark. Here, a well-planned town was laid out with hundreds of lots developed for homes, businesses, a church

and a school. When the Canadian Pacific Railway skirted the town in 1904 by two kilometres, the town relocated to be near the rail station. Today, Pilot Mound has a population of 630.

In 1890, Mary's older sister Ellen Burgess visited Manitoba from West Toronto Junction (about 10 kilometres northwest of downtown Toronto). James and Mary Cuthbert's daughter Mabel (9) and their niece Maud Bailey (12) returned with their aunt Ellen to attend school in Toronto for two years.

In 1891, the Cuthbert family moved into "the big frame eight room . . . house that was L shaped." It was a new two-storey building on their farm that fronted the road.

Each fall, during their school years, two of the Cuthbert girls, when they were around 9 to 13 years old, were volunteered to cook, set tables and do other light chores for the threshers during the harvest. The girls would go to "the south place," which was 15 kilometres south of Pilot Mound. James Cuthbert attended to roasting beef at the harvest and Mary baked pies, at home.

James and Mary Cuthbert's daughter Eunice advised in notes she prepared later in life that: "We [as school age children] wore moccasins until the snow began to thaw in the spring." I, too, wore moccasins, probably until the end of elementary school.



Pilot Mound's Main Street—circa 1910

James died, at 50 years of age, on November 27, 1902 after a “brief illness.” He is said to have died from alcohol abuse. James is buried in the Greenwood Cemetery, about two kilometres west of Pilot Mound. At the time of James’ death, his daughters Alice (23) and Mabel (20) were living with their aunt Ellen Burgess in West Toronto Junction, studying piano and voice, respectively, at the Toronto Conservatory of Music.

Shortly after James died, Mary’s sister Ellen moved from West Toronto Junction to live with her in Pilot Mound. They shared living accommodation for most of the next 18 years, until Mary moved to Winnipeg.

Mary was able to keep the farm running, with the help of her sons Jim and Rob, after her husband died in 1902, but after five years, these sons indicated they wanted to leave the farm. Mary sold the farm in 1907 for \$10,000, and some of this money was used to buy a home in Pilot Mound. At this time, only three children were still living at home—John Beverley, Daisy and Merle.

In the summer of 1907, Mary’s daughter Eunice (18) “took charge” at home so her mother could take a holiday with her daughter Mabel (25) and go to the West Coast for five weeks. They very likely stayed on the coast with Mary’s sister Jennie Alcock and her family (Chapter 19).

At the time of the 1916 census, Mary Cuthbert (63) was living on Railway Street in Pilot Mound, with her son John Beverley (25), a recently graduated lawyer, and her sister Ellen Burgess (67). About 1920, Mary moved to Winnipeg to live with her daughter Eunice and son-in-law Clark Hopper (Chapter 21) in their new home at 885 Corydon Avenue in south Winnipeg. The June 1921 Winnipeg census shows Mary living with the Hopper family.

Mary Cuthbert passed away, at 82 years of age, on March 1, 1935 in Winnipeg. She was buried in the Greenwood Cemetery, just west of Pilot Mound, after a service in Knox United Church. James and Mary Cuthbert and their three oldest children are reported to be in Plot 231 of the Greenwood Cemetery. However, as noted below, there is also documentation suggesting that Jim Cuthbert is buried in Agassiz, B.C.

James and Mary Cuthbert’s children James, Alice, Robert, Mabel and Emily were born near High Bluff and the other children—Eunice, John Beverley, Daisy and Merle—were born in Pilot Mound. Three other children died in infancy: Edith (b. 1878), Gertrude Mary (b. 1884) and Arthur Evan (December 12, 1885–February 12, 1886).

The nine Cuthbert children who lived to adulthood were:

Jim Cuthbert

James Charles Cuthbert was born on July 31, 1876. Jim remained on the family farm and helped keep it running until he was 31 years old in 1907. When he was 35, Jim travelled through the U.S. His name appears on a 1911 manifest of "Alien Passengers" entering the U.S. at Portal, North Dakota, that adjoins the province of Saskatchewan. Portal is about 500 kilometres southeast of Saskatoon. The 1911 manifest shows Jim's former permanent residence as Saskatoon.

Jim remained a bachelor throughout his life. He is reported to have lived at times in Yale and Squilax, B.C. Yale was central to the 1858 Fraser River Gold Rush. Jim's Registration of Death documents that he lived in British Columbia for 50 years, confirms his last permanent residence was Yale and states that he retired in 1958, at age 81, as a mining prospector after working in this capacity most of his life. The death record was completed by his brother-in-law Roy Hopper (Chapter 17). Yale is a small community of less than 200 people, located 75 kilometres northeast of Chilliwack on the Fraser River and 175 kilometres east of Vancouver.

Jim died in the Greenwood Nursing Home in Kent, Agassiz, B.C., at 85 years of age, on February 21, 1962. Jim is buried in the Valley View Cemetery in Agassiz. Agassiz is about 25 kilometres northeast of Chilliwack.

Alice Cuthbert

Alice Maud Cuthbert was born on February 16, 1879. At the time of the 1901 census, when she was 22, Alice boarded in a Toronto home while working as a teacher, perhaps learning the skills needed to teach the deaf. She was a prominent teacher at the School for the Deaf in Winnipeg for most of her career. At the time of the 1916 census, Alice was living with her sister Mabel Musgrove and her family in the West End of Winnipeg. In April 1925, Alice set off for a vacation to France and returned from Cherbourg to Montreal, on the *Minnedosa* on May 29, 1925.

Alice owned a small cottage located off Pembina Highway, south of Winnipeg. The cottage was in an isolated area, with light ground cover of bushes and small deciduous trees. Alice remained unmarried throughout her life and died, at 70 years of age, on January 2, 1950. She is buried in the Greenwood Cemetery near Pilot Mound.

Robert Cuthbert

Robert Dudley Cuthbert was born on December 1, 1880. Like his older brother, Jim, Rob remained on the family farm, and helped keep it running until 1907. The 1911 Winnipeg census reports Robert, 30, was living as a lodger at 575 Spence Street and working in his own grocery business.

On January 2, 1912, Robert (31) married Frances (Frankie) May McKim Sharp (22) in the town of Camden, county of Lennox and Addington, 40 kilometres east of Kingston, Ontario. Frankie was born on March 4, 1889 in Lansing, Ingham, Michigan. Frankie’s parents were John Justin Sharp (b. 1850), a blacksmith, and Elizabeth Ann Wormworth (b. 1852).

The 1916 Winnipeg census confirms that Frankie was born in America, of Irish ancestry. She moved to Canada in 1904 and, by 1916, had become a Canadian citizen. Robert is listed in the 1916 census as an employee/worker.

A July 1920 port-of-entry manifest shows Robert entering New York state to live in Watertown. Robert is recorded on the manifest as a labourer. Frankie arrived in Watertown in September 1920. A 1921 Canadian immigration form shows Robert returning to Canada through Kingston, to look for work in the annual harvest. This form also shows that Robert left Canada in 1919 at Niagara Falls, Ontario, to look for work in the U.S.

The 1925 New York state census shows Robert (44) and Frankie (36)



The Cuthbert sisters in 1926—L-R Alice, Daisy, Emily, Merle, Eunice and Mabel.



Robert Dudley Cuthbert (circa 1905) and John Beverley Cuthbert (circa 1915).

were living about 400 kilometres southwest in Hinsdale, New York, with their six children who ranged from one to 12 years of age. The youngest two children are noted as having been born in the States. Robert is listed as a boilermaker.

A June 1926 Canadian census records that Frankie Cuthbert (35) and her six children, who ranged from three to 13 years of age, were living at 99 Hillcrest Avenue in St. Boniface, now part of Winnipeg.

Robert and Frankie Cuthbert had seven children: Manchester Dudley “Chester” (October 16, 1912–March 20, 2009); Robert Lorne (January 28, 1915–September 6, 2001); Mary Ellen (February 6, 1917–May 27, 1986); Mabel Ruth (May 12, 1919–August 13, 2008); Ethel May (April 24, 1921–April 7, 2005); Frances Merle (June 5, 1923–February 18, 1981); and her twin sister Muriel (June 5, 1923–September 1923).

In 2007, Chester Cuthbert donated 60,000 science-fiction books and journals, valued at \$1 million, to the University of Alberta’s library. The donation is known as the Chester D. Cuthbert Collection.

The 1940 Winnipeg voters’ list shows that Frankie and two of her children (Chester and Mary) were living at 302 Harbison Avenue in the city’s North End. Frankie was working as a housekeeper. The 1945 Winnipeg voters’ list documents that Frankie was still living on Harbison Avenue with two

children (Mary and Merle). The 1949 Winnipeg voters' list records Frankie living with her daughter Mary, who was working as a clerk.

Robert Dudley Cuthbert died, at age 75, in the Vancouver General Hospital on April 6, 1956. Robert's Registration of Death form, which was completed with information from his brother-in-law Bill Rose states that Robert was a grain farmer for 35 years until his retirement in 1946. His last permanent address was 177 West Cordova Street in Vancouver's Gastown, located immediately east of the central business district. Robert was cremated in Vancouver, and interred in Pilot Mound's Greenwood Cemetery.

Frankie passed away in Winnipeg on March 2, 1986, just two days short of her 97th birthday. She is buried in Winnipeg's Chapel Lawn Cemetery.

Mabel Musgrove (Cuthbert)

Mabel Laura Cuthbert was born on October 9, 1882. When Mabel was 17 in 1899, she taught the primary room (grades 1, 2, 3) in Pilot Mound, with 65 students. The 1901 Winnipeg census shows Mabel (18) and her future husband, William Musgrove (19), as lodgers living in a family home, with a small number of other lodgers. This may have been how they first met.

Mabel married William Wesley Lorne Musgrove on February 5, 1908,



Ruth, Frankie, Merle and Ethel Cuthbert circa 1940. COURTESY OF KIRK RUSSELL

in her mother's home in Pilot Mound. Dr. Musgrove was born on January 15, 1882, in the rural municipality of Rockwood, according to Manitoba's Vital Statistics records. William grew up in Stonewall, 25 kilometres north of Winnipeg. Stonewall is within the rural municipality of Rockwood. William's parents were George Musgrove (September 19, 1855 Ireland–June 29, 1934 Stonewall) and Sarah Ann McKee.

William Musgrove enlisted in May 1916 to serve overseas during World War One. William was already serving the 144th Battalion (Winnipeg Rifles) as a physician, with the rank of major, when he enlisted. He went overseas with No. 4 Casualty Clearing Station, a unit raised by the Manitoba Medical College. His home, in 1916, was 46 Home Street in Winnipeg. By 1935, the family was living at 49 Oak Street in south Winnipeg. At the time of Dr. Musgrove's death in 1947, Will and Mabel were living at 147 Brock Street. Mabel was a soprano soloist in church.

William Musgrove graduated in 1906 from the University of Manitoba (Manitoba Medical College) as a medallist. In 1920, Dr. Musgrove was made a Fellow of the American College of Surgeons. He served as president of the Manitoba Medical Alumni Association in 1932. In 1934–35, he was president of the Winnipeg Medical Society. Between the two world wars, Dr. Musgrove lectured in surgery and clinical surgery in the Faculty of Medicine at the University of Manitoba. Will Musgrove was a good athlete and active in community affairs.

William and Mabel Musgrove had five children: George Stuart Musgrove, a doctor (November 17, 1908–November 2, 1950, killed in Iraq); William Roy Musgrove (September 19, 1912–October 14, 1941); James Edward "Ted" Musgrove, a doctor (February 28, 1915–November 8, 1995); Ronald John Musgrove (March 10, 1919–August 21, 2001 Toronto); and Elizabeth Ruth Musgrove (1922–March 23, 1923).

The couple's son Roy is described in the *Winnipeg Tribune* as a prominent hockey star, who was killed instantly on October 14, 1941, at 29 years of age, when he fell down a stope at the Hudson Bay mine in Flin Flon, Manitoba.

Dr. Musgrove died suddenly at his home, at age 64, on January 3, 1947, and Mabel died, at 80 years of age, on May 22, 1963. Both Mabel and Will died in Winnipeg. William is buried in the Elmwood Cemetery.

Emily Rose (Cuthbert)

Emily Mary Cuthbert was born on May 8, 1887. Emily married William John Rose, PhD, on June 5, 1912, in her mother's house in Pilot Mound.

Bill Rose was born on August 7, 1885 in Minnedosa, Manitoba. His parents were Henry Rose (March 13, 1852 Wolford, Ontario–June 6, 1923 Minnedosa, Manitoba) and Prudence Mckinney (February 17, 1856 Ontario–December 25, 1927 Minnedosa, Manitoba).

Bill Rose was Manitoba's second Rhodes Scholar. In 1908, he received a Master of Arts in Classics from Oxford University. He worked and studied in Germany, France and Poland from 1912 to 1927, including work for the Allies, after World War One, on behalf of the new Poland. He obtained his Doctor of Philosophy in 1922 from the Jegiellonian University in Krakow. Emily, a contralto, studied music in Germany.

In 1923, when Emily Rose was 35, she returned to Winnipeg from Europe for a "furlough," according to her passenger declaration form. She noted on that form that her religion is Methodist and that she is destined for 46 Home Street, in Winnipeg, where the Musgrove family lived. Emily



Emily & Bill Rose circa 1912

declared that she spoke French, Polish and English. Her stated reason for leaving Canada, in 1919, was “war work in Europe.”

Emily and Bill Rose returned to North America in 1927 when he accepted a position with Dartmouth University in New Hampshire. The 1930 census shows Bill (44) and Emily (43) were renting a home at 432 Ridge Road, Hanover, New Hampshire, and Bill was working as a professor at Dartmouth.

In 1936, they moved back to Europe when Bill Rose became a member of London University as a reader in Polish studies. During World War Two, his knowledge of Eastern Europe was invaluable to the British. During the war, he worked in Oxford, England, doing research for the Foreign Office. He also prepared outlines of peace.

In 1945, Bill Rose returned to London to work at the University of London. In 1950, he “retired” to become a visiting lecturer at the University of British Columbia. In 1956, Bill’s home was 5512 Tennis Crescent at UBC. Bill authored nine books during his lifetime, and spoke English, French, German, Polish, Italian, and Greek.

Emily and Bill Rose had no children. She died, at age 65, on May 10, 1952 in Vancouver, and he passed away, at 82 years of age, in Naramata, B.C. on March 10, 1968.

Eunice Hopper (Cuthbert)

My grandmother Eunice Cuthbert was born on July 13, 1889. Chapter 21 is dedicated to Eunice and her husband Clark Hopper.

John Beverley Cuthbert

John Beverley (“Bev”) Cuthbert was born on June 1, 1891, and he married Mary Ellenor Ruth Rutherford (26), when he was 32 years old, on June 25, 1923 in Pomona, California. Ruth was born on March 7, 1897, in Rockwood, Manitoba. Ruth immigrated with her family to Los Angeles in 1899, as noted in the 1930 U.S. census.

Ruth’s parents were James Boyd Rutherford (April 12, 1848 Millbank, Ontario–February 20, 1923 Los Angeles, California) and Elizabeth Harriet McKee (January 4, 1858 Ontario, Canada–January 19, 1933 Los Angeles, California). James Rutherford married Elizabeth McKee on December 25, 1877 in Huron, Ontario, Canada. James’ parents were William and Mary Jane Rutherford. “J.B.,” as he is listed in the 1891 Rockwood, Lisgar County,

Manitoba census, is described as a merchant. J.B. and Elizabeth were both born in Canada, of Irish ancestry.

The 1900 census reports that James Rutherford owned and operated a fruit farm in San Jose Township of Los Angeles County. He was living with his wife and two daughters, aged three and 20. James and Elizabeth had been married for 23 years at the time of this census. Ten years later, James (63) was retired and living with Elizabeth (52) and Ruth (13) in their mortgage-free home at 889 North Garry Avenue, Pomona, in San Jose Township. All three Rutherfords became U.S. citizens in 1905.

At the time of the 1920 census, James and Elizabeth Rutherford were living with their children in a rented home at 922 Pacific Avenue, Long Beach. Ruth (23) was working as a stenographer (taking shorthand) at a bank.

Bev Cuthbert was a lawyer, an active band member and a talented trombonist. As a recently qualified barrister, Bev enlisted as a private, in December 1915, to serve in the 90th Battalion (Winnipeg Rifles) of the Canadian Army. He was 5 feet 6.5 inches in height, weighed 176 pounds and had blue eyes and dark hair. Bev arrived in Liverpool, England, in July 1916 and returned to Montreal on demobilization in July 1919.

On November 9, 1920, at 29 years of age, Bev filed a “Declaration of Intention” as a first step to becoming a U.S. citizen and was granted citizenship on May 28, 1926.

Bev and Ruth Cuthbert lived in California and had three children: Nancy Elizabeth Cuthbert (May 7, 1927–March 8, 1993 Anaheim CA); Boyd Rutherford Cuthbert (June 6, 1930–January 2017 Costa Mesa); and John Beverley Cuthbert (July 12, 1935–November 26, 1971).

The 1930 census records Elizabeth Rutherford (72), a widow, living in Los Angeles, with Bev, Ruth and their young daughter and a domestic. The Cuthberts owned their \$18,000 home at 735 North Orlando Avenue, Los Angeles. Bev was “working on his own account” in the practice of law. The 1938 Los Angeles City directory records that Bev Cuthbert was a credit manager with Hammond Lumber Co. and still living on Orlando Avenue.

The 1940 census records the Cuthbert family living in a home they owned, valued at \$17,500, at 735 North Orlando Avenue. Bev (48) and Ruth (43) were living with their three children ages four, nine and 12. Bev was



1960 in California—L-R Clark & Eunice (Cuthbert) Hopper and Ruth & Bev Cuthbert

employed full time in 1940 as a credit manager by a retail lumber company and earned \$2,400 in 1939.

The 1940 census states their address was 735 North Kings Road, which seems an error, as Beverley's 1942 U.S. military registration card shows they were still living in the Orlando Avenue home, one street over from North Kings Road. The registration card notes that his employer was Mutual Building Materials Co., 9274 Santa Monica Boulevard, Los Angeles.

In the years that followed, the Cuthberts lived at 6708 Melrose Avenue, Los Angeles, at the time of the 1950 census, and after that, at 1861 West Embassy Avenue, Anaheim.

Bev and Ruth Cuthbert's daughter, Nancy Cuthbert, married Ivan Darrell Hatfield (1923–2012) on June 30, 1948. Nancy and Ivan had two daughters:

Deborah Hatfield was born in Los Angeles on April 7, 1949. She was a well-respected and award winning "lyric coloratura" (specialist soprano singer) at a young age. By March 1971, she had

won many awards and was a Young Artist Guild Member of the Music Teachers' Association of California, their highest performance award. Debbie married David Rich on June 24, 1972. She went on to become a speech and language teacher in Anaheim. Debbie died, at 69 years of age, on October 11, 2018 in Garden Grove, Orange County.



Deborah Hatfield, 1971. COURTESY OF A LOS ANGELES-AREA NEWSPAPER

Esther Hatfield (b. February 6, 1951) married Dick (unknown surname). Esther and Dick's children were Jenny (b. abt. 1975) and Jeff (b. abt. 1980).

Bev and Ruth Cuthbert's son John Cuthbert, Jr., earned a Bachelor of Arts in history from the University of California in 1958. John, Jr., married Pansy Pritchard (1937–2020) of North Carolina, on July 24, 1959. John and Pansy Cuthbert had two children: Scott Cuthbert and Lisa Cuthbert.

Bev Cuthbert died, at age 70, on September 29, 1961 in Anaheim, Orange County, and Ruth passed away there, at 92 years of age, on January 25, 1990.

Daisy Hopper (Cuthbert)

Daisy May Cuthbert was born on May 6, 1894, and married Robert Milton (Roy) Hopper, Clark Hopper's brother. Information is provided on Roy and Daisy Hopper in Chapter 17.

Merle McEwen (Cuthbert)

Merle Cuthbert was born on August 1, 1896, and married Wesley Haddon McEwen on September 30, 1925 in his parent's hometown of Medicine Hat, Alberta. Merle was the youngest of nine children and Wesley, the youngest of six.

Wesley McEwen was born on February 26, 1892, on a farm near the hamlet of Massie, Grey County, Ontario, about 175 kilometres northwest of Toronto. When he was twelve, the McEwen family bought a farm in Gleichen, Alberta, about 100 kilometres east of Calgary.

In 1906, Wesley McEwen left school at 14 years of age to be a farm labourer. Five years later, he applied to acquire a 160-acre farm under “homestead” laws that allowed him to own the farm by meeting certain rules for cultivating the land and building a home on it. This farm was located about 250 kilometres southeast of Calgary. By 1920, his farm was 450 acres with 350 acres under cultivation. That year, Wesley enrolled at the University of Manitoba to obtain a Bachelor of Science in agriculture.

Wesley McEwen met Merle Cuthbert in 1921, and they married four years later. Merle Cuthbert taught school in Pilot Mound, Dauphin and Winnipeg before going to university. She graduated from the University of



Wesley and Merle (Cuthbert) McEwen's children—Bill, Roy, David & Joyce in 1937.

Manitoba in 1926, with a Bachelor of Science in home economics. Wesley McEwen received the Isbister scholarship each year he attended university, for achieving the top ranking. On graduation in 1926, he was awarded the Lieutenant Governor's Medal in Agriculture.

Wesley McEwen began his cooperatives career in 1926 with the Manitoba Wheat Pool. He quickly became a lifelong, passionate leader of agricultural cooperatives. In 1930, he moved with his family to the Maritimes to live in Moncton, New Brunswick, and work for the Canadian Cooperative Wheat Producers Limited. In 1932, he was appointed manager responsible for the Canadian Livestock Co-operative (Maritimes) that grew from a staff of four when he started to about 300 employees, 30 years later.

When he was 70 years of age in 1962, Wesley McEwen stepped down as a manager but continued to have a role as secretary of the Maritime Co-operative Services Ltd. He retired completely, at age 79, in 1971.

Merle McEwen died on September 25, 1972 in Moncton, at 76 years of age, five days short of their 47th wedding anniversary. Wesley McEwen moved to Sidney, B.C. in 1975 to live with his daughter Joyce and her husband. He passed away, at age 90, on December 19, 1982 in Sidney. Both Merle and Wesley are interred at Fair Haven Memorial Gardens in Moncton.

On its 50th anniversary in 1977, the Maritime Co-operative Services Ltd. opened its new office building in Moncton, the McEwen Centre, named in Wesley's honour.

Merle and Wesley McEwen had four children: Joyce Audrey McEwen (December 8, 1927, Brandon, MB–September 22, 2017 Victoria, B.C.); David John McEwen (b. July 23, 1930, Winnipeg, MB); Roy Beverley McEwen (b. December 2, 1931, Moncton, NB); and Frank William McEwen (b. March 20, 1934, Moncton, NB).

GENERATIONS AT A GLANCE

How this Cuthbert family is related to the author's family:

1. James Cuthbert married Mary Burgess
2. Eunice Cuthbert married Clark Hopper
3. Elinor Hopper married Hume Young
4. Donald Young married Roberta McKnight
5. Tracey Young married Christopher Good
Jennifer Young
David Young
6. Abigail Good and Malcolm Good (siblings)
Sophie Young and Clark Young (siblings)

Clark Reid Hopper and Eunice Cuthbert

Clark Hopper (Chapter 17) was born in Strathclair, Manitoba, on October 13, 1889. My grandparents Clark Hopper and Eunice Cuthbert (Chapter 20) married on May 19, 1916 in Pilot Mound, when both were 26 years old. Eunice was born in Pilot Mound on July 13, 1889. Strathclair is about 270 kilometres west and a little north from Winnipeg. Pilot Mound is in an area of productive farmland near the American border and roughly 200 kilometres southwest of Winnipeg.

Clark and Eunice first met in October 1912, when they were both 23 years old. Clark's cousin, Cosy (Cosette) Munroe, who was Eunice's Normal School classmate, invited Eunice and Clark to dinner. Cosy Munroe invited them both back for dinner the following week, and Clark took Eunice home. Eunice wrote later in life that "my throat was sore and he got the impression that I was not as friendly as I had been on the previous Sunday."

It wasn't until July 1913 that Eunice happened to notice Clark at a wedding where she was waitressing for friends, and they were able to catch up. Then in October 1913, when Eunice was back working in Winnipeg, Clark invited her to Shakespeare's *The Taming of the Shrew*. That was "the beginning of our friendship," Eunice wrote many years later, and "the start of many outings together."

On May 17, 1914, the couple got engaged. Unfortunately, Eunice's teaching during this period was becoming too much for her to bear, as



Clark Hopper, standing second from left, 1912 Manitoba College Inter Collegiate Debating Championship Team.

described later in this chapter, and in February 1915, she broke off her engagement with Clark. In June 1915, Eunice requested a one-year leave of absence from Winnipeg Schools, and moved back to Pilot Mound where she accepted a teaching position with a smaller class. In August, she was feeling better and returned to Winnipeg for a visit, and Clark and Eunice got engaged a second time.

Clark called Eunice in Pilot Mound on May 17, 1916, to ask if they could move up their wedding plans as he had been assigned to military training in Ottawa and would soon be heading overseas. They were married in Pilot Mound two days later, on Friday the 19th at 10:30 am. Later that day, the newlyweds headed by train to Winnipeg, with Eunice's mother, for a family wedding party hosted by Eunice's sister Mabel and brother-in-law William Musgrove.

That weekend, the couple left on the train for Ottawa so Clark could attend two four-week courses in musketry and in machine guns. In the days between the two courses, the couple found time to take the train to Toronto and Niagara Falls for a brief honeymoon.

Clark decided, at a young age, that he was not cut out for farming. This



Clark Hopper and Eunice Cuthbert, May, 1916.

was a wise decision, as he had little aptitude for construction or mechanical matters.

In 1903, at 14 years of age, Clark moved to Rapid City from nearby Newdale to live with an aunt and uncle for a year in order to attend school. Rapid City is 240 kilometres west of Winnipeg and 40 kilometres north of Brandon. Clark enjoyed playing lacrosse, football, hockey and other sports in Rapid City. After that, Clark lived with an uncle, a bank manager, in Winnipeg where he attended high school, but he continued to play for Rapid City sports teams when he could.

Clark graduated from Manitoba College, part of the University of Manitoba, with a Bachelor of Arts in 1912. During his years at university, he lived in Winnipeg with his aunt Maude and her husband George Munroe. Maude and George were Cosy Munroe's parents.

Following graduation, Clark completed his Master of Arts in economics while on the staff of the Manitoba Agricultural College. At the college, he was a member of the English department for 43 years until about 1955, except for his overseas service during World War One and a year in Minneapolis, discussed below. Although his postsecondary education was in economics, he discovered that English literature was his

passion. He served the faculties of Engineering, Agriculture and Home Economics.

Clark applied in February 1916 to serve overseas in World War One. In this application, he listed his next of kin as his father, John A. Hopper, Jr., with a home address of 1813 Morton Avenue, Vancouver, B.C. In May 1916, Clark completed an Officers' Declaration Paper, which records that he was 26 years old, a lieutenant and a lecturer in English and economics, and that he weighed 141 pounds. He listed his next of kin as his new wife, Eunice. He sailed overseas on the same ship as his brother Roy, leaving Halifax on October 31 and landing in Liverpool on November 11, 1916.

Clark Hopper was a newly appointed lieutenant in the 196th (Western Universities) battalion and served with the 11th Canadian Machine Gun Company near Lens, France, where he distinguished himself. This action was the Battle of Hill 70, in August 1917, against five divisions of the German Sixth Army. For his efforts during this offensive, he was presented the Military Cross, which is awarded to commissioned officers with the rank of captain or below, for distinguished and meritorious service in battle. Other battles that he fought in during the war include Ypres Salient, Passchendaele, Amiens, Arras and Cambria. After the battle of Amiens, in the summer of 1918, he was promoted to captain and placed in charge of a machine gun battery (a battery included about 115 personnel).

A newspaper provides the official Military Cross citation:

On August 21, 1917, during a brigade operation to the southwest of Lens, Lieutenant Hopper, although a new officer, took control of one section that had an officer killed, and of another section that had an officer wounded, and handled the twelve guns with the most conspicuous fearlessness and coolness under intense shell fire. Two guns were blown up, Lieut. Hopper immediately moved the section further forward and continued firing. His courage and dash was a splendid example of conspicuous bravery. He stayed on duty and controlled the three sections for the entire operation. [Lens is about 200 kilometres north of Paris.]

On one occasion, in 1918, he was fortunate to be invited for his leave to stay on the French Riviera in the Hotel du Cap Martin. This was a superb,

historic accommodation where Queen Victoria and Emperor Francis Joseph once stayed. Clark wrote in a letter at this time: “I am trying not to think of the change . . . [back] to a vermin infested dugout with a candle and a pile of sand bags.”

At a time when Canada’s population was around 8 million, the country’s World War One dead totalled 66,000 and many thousands more came home with serious mental or physical injuries or both.

Clark’s service records with Library and Archives Canada show that on October 1, 1918, he was shot in the head by a German sniper. By good fortune, his life was spared when he turned his head just as the bullet reached him. The bullet passed from the right side of his face, one and a half inches in front of his ear,

and out through the left side of his nose, at the inner angle of the eye and junction of cheek and nose. He spent two months at the 3rd London General Hospital in Wandsworth, in southwest London. He was discharged from hospital on December 6, 1918.

Later in life, Eunice prepared a written account of the sniper shooting which reads: “On October 1, 1918, just before Armistice, he was shot by a German sniper who was hidden in a tree about 25 feet from where he stood . . . His men captured the sniper and both walked to the Casualty Clearing Station, Lieut. Hopper sharing his rum with the sniper, who was now a prisoner.”

Eunice wrote that Clark landed in Halifax on Christmas Day 1918, and reached Winnipeg on the 28th. From there, Clark and Eunice took the train to Pilot Mound, where her mother, Mary Cuthbert, and the couple’s 22-month-old son lived.



Clark Hopper’s Military Cross.



Left—Elinor & Joe Hopper age one and six years in 1923. Right—Elinor at six in 1927.

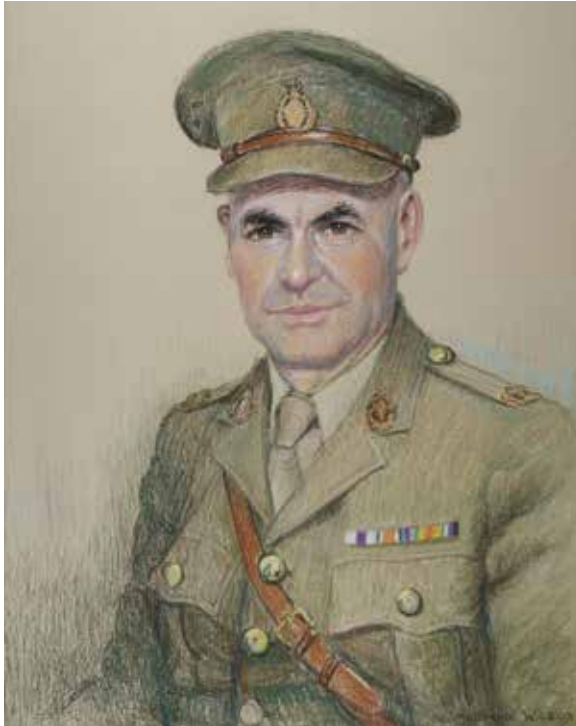
Clark Hopper was a captain when he was shot by the sniper, but he was required to relinquish this rank and return to the rank of lieutenant on January 2, 1919. After the war, he was an assistant professor of English at the University of Manitoba.

When his daughter, Elinor, was 10 years old, she moved with her dad, in September 1931, to Minneapolis, and attended Grade 5 at Marcy Elementary School, not far from the University of Minnesota. Clark enrolled in a doctoral program in economics at the University of Minnesota in 1931–1932. He completed all the required courses for his doctorate but not the thesis.

By November 1941, Clark had been promoted to the rank of major, and shortly after, he became a lieutenant-colonel. He was the commanding officer of the University of Manitoba's Canadian Officers in Training Corps (COTC) during World War Two.

By 1945, he was a professor of English at the university. When Clark was promoted to professor, it was the first time the university's English department had employed two full-time professors. Previously, there had only been one professor.

Throughout his life, Clark was active in sports. As a youth and young man, he played lacrosse, football and hockey. In school, for example, he played



Clark, 1941 at age 52.

on the 1905 Newdale Ravens' Lacrosse team with three of his brothers. Clark played inside left for the 1914–15 Manitoba Agricultural College Football Team that went on to become Intercollegiate Champions. He was a member of the Manitoba College Debating Team, Intercollegiate Championship Team of 1911–12. He was an avid golfer and curler through much of his adult life. He was an active member of the Masonic Lodge, Granite Curling Club, Southwood Golf Club, River Heights Bowling Club, Scottish Rite and Westminster United Church. He was a past master of Prince Rupert's Masonic Lodge No.1. Clark was compassionate, friendly, outgoing and personable.

After he retired from university, about 1955, he worked part-time as a public relations person for the Manitoba sugar beet industry for more than a decade. This work included presentations to elementary school age children to spread the message that sugar made from beets grown in Manitoba was the same and every bit as good as imported cane sugar. I recall being proud of Grampa when he spoke about sugar beets to the entire student body in the auditorium of my elementary school. This part-time

work was something that he enjoyed. It allowed him to get out, meet people and communicate a story that he believed in. He enjoyed public speaking. Clark Hopper co-authored a book, published in 1968 by the Manitoba Beet Growers, entitled: *Sugar Farmers of Manitoba, the Manitoba Sugar Beet Industry in Story and Picture*.

About 1920, the Hopper family purchased a home at 885 Corydon Avenue in south Winnipeg where they lived for nearly twenty years. The June 1921 Winnipeg census records that this home was occupied by Clark and Eunice Hopper, their son Cuthbert (4) and Eunice's mother, Mary Cuthbert (68). This home was razed long ago to make way for commercial buildings.

Voters' lists show Clark and Eunice living at the following addresses in south Winnipeg over the years:



1934 L-R Joe, Eunice, Elinor and Clark Hopper.

- 1938—9 Middlegate in Armstrong Point
- 1953—Apartment 5, 738 Dorchester Avenue
- 1963—596 Campbell Street
- 1968—Apartment 803—1155 Grant Avenue

The couple later moved into assisted living accommodation at 70 Poseidon Bay.

Eunice Hopper (Cuthbert)

Eunice Hopper received her early education at Pilot Mound School. After graduating from high school, at age 17, in June 1906, Eunice attended the first phase of teacher training at Normal School in Winnipeg for four months (third class normal) from November 1906 to February 1907. Eunice attended four months of second class normal at the end of 1908.

Eunice taught grades 1, 2 and 3 in rural schools: Killarney, Dominion City, Elgin and Clearwater, Manitoba, until the fall of 1910 when she accepted a teaching position in Winnipeg at \$600 for 10 months at Lord Selkirk School. She had also started piano lessons by then, and by 1913, Eunice had passed, with first class honours, Toronto School of Music's third year piano.

In the fall of 1913, Eunice was transferred to Laura Secord School where she taught 55 grade five students, including some boys ranging in age from 12 to 16. This did not go well. Because large class sizes and difficult students continued to be a problem, Eunice asked for a one-year leave of absence from Winnipeg Schools in June 1915. She went home to live with her mother and her aunt Ellen Burgess (Chapter 19). Eunice took a teaching job in Pilot Mound in the fall of 1915, with a smaller class, and paid \$15 a month board to her mother.

In 1902, when Eunice was 13, and her father, James Cuthbert, was 50, he died from alcohol abuse. This had a major impact on Eunice, as she was active in the Temperance Movement, and never drank alcohol throughout her life.

The Temperance Movement was designed to control alcohol consumption. The movement was active in the late 19th and early 20th centuries, when social aid was negligible, and when the majority of Canadians were self-employed as farmers, fishermen or small businessmen. The movement stemmed from the belief that self-discipline was essential to economic success and that alcohol



Eunice—1974 at 85.

was an obstacle to self-discipline. The movement strongly encouraged the limited use of alcohol or abstinence. The Canadian Christian Temperance Union for women was at its peak at the start of World War One. In 1915 and 1916, all provinces, except Québec, prohibited the retail sale of alcohol.

Eunice and Clark became members of the Westminster United Church in 1919. In 1963, Eunice became a chartered and life member of her church.

Eunice believed strongly in the words of the Bible, and was not able to accept evolution as proposed by Charles Darwin. She was a neat, orderly person.

Clark died, at age 82, in Winnipeg on July 2, 1972. Eunice passed away on April 10, 1989 in Winnipeg, three months short of her 100th birthday. Clark and Eunice are buried in the Chapel Lawn Cemetery.

Clark and Eunice had three children, all born in Winnipeg: Cuthbert Clark (“Joe”) Hopper, born on March 5, 1917; Gordon William Hopper (February 8, 1920–January 3, 1921); and Mary Elinor Hopper, born on November 8, 1921 (Chapter 23). Their son was known as Cuth to family and friends who knew him before he moved to Toronto in 1937, when he became known as Joe.

Joe Hopper

Clark and Eunice’s son, Joe, attended La Verendrye Elementary School, Earl Grey Junior High School and Kelvin High School in south Winnipeg. In his graduating year, he achieved the highest grade point average posted since the school had opened in 1912. He was awarded the Governor General’s Medal, the Isbister Scholarship, and was chosen valedictorian for Kelvin in 1933. Joe also played piano, was a good cricket player and was a junior men’s tennis champion for Manitoba.

Shortly after high school in 1935, Joe began to article to become a chartered accountant (CA) with a local Winnipeg firm, William Gray and

Company—a firm that later merged with Price Waterhouse. He worked with the Winnipeg firm for two years and continued to live at home at 885 Corydon Avenue with his parents. In 1937, he moved to Toronto to continue his chartered accountancy career with Clark Houston & Co.

While he was a CA student, Joe (23) met and married Dorothy Grace Hill (24) on July 20, 1940, in Toronto. Grace was born on February 7, 1916. Joe Hopper became a member of the Institute of Chartered Accountants of Ontario on January 28, 1942. Sometime after obtaining his CA, Joe accepted a position with the Canadian Pad and Paper Company, a company that Grace's father, Roy, owned. Joe was active in sports all his life.

Roy Corson Hill was born in the village of King (north of Toronto) on November 26, 1892, and he attended public school there. Roy Hill (22) married Elsie Grace Durie (19) on February 6, 1915. Elsie was born in Toronto on March 23, 1895, and died there, at age 80, on September 25, 1975.

Mr. Hill took his first job in Toronto, at the age of 12, as an office boy, for \$3 a week. He began taking commerce courses at night, and seven years



Joe and Grace Hopper, July 1940.

later, at age 19, he landed a job in the warehouse of a textbook publisher. By 1916, Mr. Hill (24) was a travelling stationery salesman earning \$30 a week, covering the territory from Montreal to Winnipeg.

In 1918, Roy Hill borrowed \$432 on a life insurance policy, borrowed \$1,500 from his parents and started the Canadian Pad and Paper Co. Limited, on the second floor of a remodeled home on Wellington Street, in downtown Toronto. The Hilroy name arrived in 1958, when all of Roy Hill's companies were merged to become Hilroy Envelopes and Stationery Limited. Hilroy continued to grow, in part, through acquiring financially troubled companies that Hilroy management turned around. By the 1960s, Hilroy notebooks and loose-leaf paper were being used by millions of Canadians.

As a senior executive, Joe Hopper was integral to the success of Hilroy. In 1968, Roy Hill sold the business to Abitibi Paper, but he remained at Hilroy as chairman. Both Roy Hill and Joe Hopper became members of the board of directors of the publicly listed Abitibi Paper (now Resolute Forest Products). Roy died, at age 86, on August 10, 1978. The Hilroy factory has continued in operation since 1947, near Caledonia and Eglinton in Toronto, now employing about 100, down from a one-time peak of 400.



1967—Joe Hopper and Doreen Parry married in Montserrat with Roy Hopper on right.



50th Wedding Anniversary May 1966. L-R—back Joe Hopper, Eunice & Clark Hopper, Elinor & Hume Young; middle Carol, Ken and Margot Hopper, David, Jane, & Donald Young; front Douglas, Nancy & Andrew Young.

Joe and Grace Hopper had four children, all born in Toronto: Carol Joanne Hopper (b. October 13, 1941), Margot Bernice Hopper (b. February 10, 1943), Kenneth Clark Hopper (b. April 9, 1945) and Roy Wellington Hopper (b. December 24, 1952).

Grace Hopper died unexpectedly, when she was 49, on November 17, 1965. Joe (49) married Doreen Perry (43) on January 8, 1967 in Montserrat. Doreen was born on March 18, 1923, and was from Leicester, England. Nine years after his second marriage, Joe died of brain cancer, at 59 years of age, on July 11, 1976. Grace and Joe Hopper are interred in Toronto's Park Lawn Cemetery. Doreen Hopper (Perry) passed away in Toronto, on February 13, 2023, a month before her 100th birthday.

Elinor Hopper

Clark and Eunice's daughter, Elinor Hopper, and her family are discussed in Chapter 23.

Walter Beatty Young and Frances Mary Blake Flett

My grandfather Walter Beatty Young (Chapter 11) was born in Hawthorne Lodge (the family home) in Little Britain on July 6, 1880. Little Britain is about 30 kilometres north of downtown Winnipeg.

Walter went to school in Selkirk, Manitoba, and later attended Royal Military College (RMC) at Fort Henry in Kingston, Ontario. He was at RMC from 1897 to 1901, when he graduated with a military engineering degree.

After graduation from RMC, Walter returned to Winnipeg and worked for C.C. Chataway as a land surveyor. Having passed his examination for the board of examiners and been found “duly qualified to fill the office and perform the duties,” Walter received his certificate of membership in March 1904 in the Association of Manitoba



Walter Young.



1894 Walter Young (14) standing, with brothers Alex and Philip; lead dog, Kenyo.

Land Surveyors. In January 1937, he received an honorary membership in this association.

Walter remained with Chataway until he was appointed examiner of surveys for the Winnipeg Land Titles Office for the Province of Manitoba in 1910—a position he held until his retirement in 1950.

Walter married Frances Mary Blake Flett (Chapter 15) on July 10, 1907, in Vancouver, where Frances and her mother lived. Frances was born on October 5, 1885, in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan. Prince Albert is not far from key North-West Rebellion battles that occurred in the first few months of 1885. Frances grew up in Prince Albert. She attended convent school, then took a stenographer's course and worked as a secretary in a business as a young woman. Frances Flett and her brother Douglas (also known as John) were visiting their grandmother Nancy Flett (Chapter 14) in Winnipeg when Frances met



Frances Mary Blake Flett 1905.



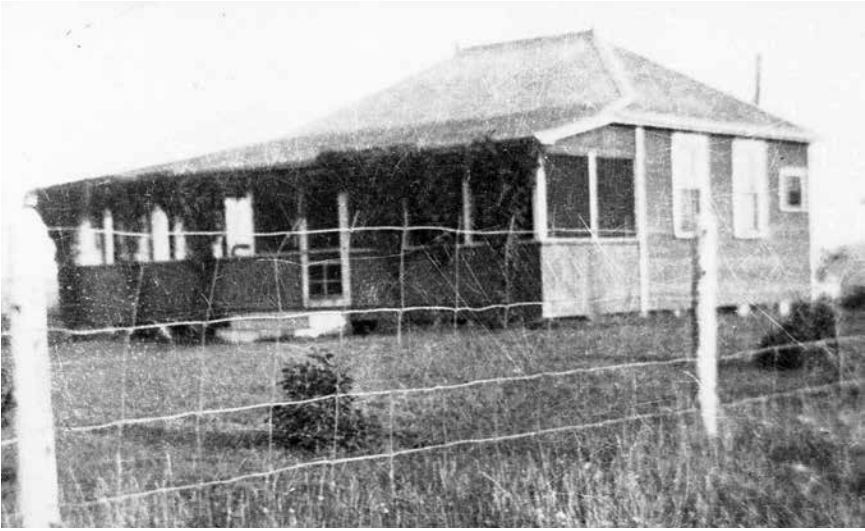
Frances (21) and Walter (27) Young on July 10, 1907 in Vancouver.

Walter at a picnic. This meeting would have occurred prior to September 1902.

The 1911 Winnipeg census lists Walter and Frances Young with their son David (3) and shows the family was living at 255 Aubrey Street in the city's West End. Walter's declared 1910 income was \$2,500.

By the 1916 Winnipeg census, the Walter Young family, including three children (David 8, Kay 5, and Eileen, 1) and a domestic, were living at 492 Camden Place, about one kilometre east of the Aubrey Street home. Living beside them, at 494 Camden Place, were Walter's parents, David and Rosina Young. Fowler & Young constructed these two Camden Place homes. Walter's younger brother Alex was a partner in this new construction company.

At the time of the 1921 census, Walter and Frances were still living at 492 Camden Place. Their next-door neighbours at that time were Dr. David Young and Walter's older brother, Hunter, his wife, Birdie, and their daughters



Young family cottage at Sherringham Park, St. Laurent, Manitoba – circa 1928.

Belle Young (10) and Muriel Harper (18). Muriel was Birdie's daughter from her first marriage. Both Belle and Muriel are listed as granddaughters of Dr. Young.

By 1923, the Youngs had outgrown their home on Camden Place and moved to a rental house at 1 Lenore Street for a year, before moving to 175 Arlington Street, in 1924, where Walter and Frances lived, with their growing family, for about 30 years, until the mid-1950s. Walter never owned a car; he walked about a mile to and from work daily as well as walking home for lunch.

Each of these homes is located between the Assiniboine River and Portage Avenue in the city's West End. Walter and Frances moved, about 1955, from Arlington Street to a smaller house on the south side of the Assiniboine River at 261 Beaverbrook Street. This change allowed them to be closer to their daughter Eileen and son Hume and their families.

In 1919, Walter and Frances purchased a cottage at St. Laurent, on Lake Manitoba. Initially, it was only accessible by train, but later, it could also be reached by bus. Most of the family would stay for the entire summer. Although the cottage was located not far from the railway track, and almost a mile from the lakeshore, there were many happy times recalled by all who enjoyed their summers at this home in the country.

The cottage allowed the family to escape the heat and humidity of the city in the days before air conditioning. Although modest, the family felt



Walter and Frances' 50th Wedding Anniversary at Lower Fort Garry, July 1957. Walter & Frances seated; Front, L-R John & Pat Wilson, Richard & Arlene Jones, Cathy & Eileen Barber, Valerie & Eldred Young, Donald, Elinor, David, Hume & Jane Young; Middle, Olive Young, Joan Wilson, Fran Jones, Stan Barber, Etta & David Young, Mary Doupe, Kay Young; Back, Bruce Young, David Wilson, Susan Drake, Bertha Young, Al Jones, Alex Young, Margaret Drake, Art Sparling holding Mary Anne Drake, Barb Sparling, Hunter & Elsie Young

fortunate to have a summer home throughout the Great Depression. The cottage was sold around 1944. Today, the fourteen cottages in this area have either been moved to the lakeshore or razed.

Frances was a warm, friendly, well-loved person and a devoted mother. As a youngster and young adult, she enjoyed tobogganing. For many years, Frances actively worked on various projects of the Westminster United Church Women's Group in Winnipeg. Walter was kind, quiet, reserved and a pacifist by nature. As a young man, Walter enjoyed tennis. Later in life, he had a passion for gardening and preferred to start both flowers and vegetables from seed. Both Frances and Walter were avid bridge players, and each belonged to two bridge clubs. Frances was a wonderful cook who enjoyed hosting dinners, especially for family.

Because Walter worked for a branch of the provincial government, but apparently not directly for the government, he was not entitled to a regular government pension. As a result, he worked until he was 70 years of age, when he was finally able to negotiate a pension.

The January 2, 1951 *Winnipeg Free Press* recognized Walter's 40 years of service. The newspaper noted that as examiner of surveys it was: "Mr. Young's job was to check all plans for registration of land with the office for such things as roads, rights of way, rail lines or power lines." Walter said the political struggles which accompany the location of such routes did not affect his work as "they either came before or after our work was done." Walter was a registered land surveyor in Manitoba for 61 years.

Walter died in Grace Hospital in Winnipeg on March 16, 1965, at 84 years old. Frances lived for three more years in the couple's Beaverbrook home until she fell and broke her hip, in early 1968. In July 1969, Frances suffered a massive stroke, after which she could not speak. She was confined to bed and remained in Winnipeg hospitals from the date of the hip injury until she passed away in the Princess Elizabeth Hospital, at age 86, on Saturday, May 6, 1972. Walter and Frances are buried in Chapel Lawn Cemetery, Winnipeg.

Walter and Frances were all about family. The couple had seven children, all of whom were born in Winnipeg. Some information is provided below on this close family.

David Young

David Young was born on May 18, 1908. He (28) married Etta Jenkins

(30) in Winnipeg on February 20, 1937. Etta was born on September 19, 1906. David articulated with Price Waterhouse & Co. in Winnipeg, and became a member of the Manitoba Institute of Chartered Accountants on June 1, 1932. David worked for Revenue Canada in Winnipeg, before taking a management position about 1946, with a major forest company in northwest Ontario, in the city of Dryden. About 1965, he accepted a promotion to become treasurer with the company's Canadian head office in Quebec City. He and Etta retired in 1971 to 2336 Devon Road, Oakville, Greater Toronto.

David and Etta Young had two daughters: Eldred (Ellie) Helen Young (b. July 8, 1938) and Valerie Young (b. March 6, 1948). David enjoyed tennis, badminton, golf, photography and swimming. Etta died of cancer May 2, 1989, at 83 years of age, and David passed away, at age 88, on July 13, 1996.

Kay Young

Kathleen McLean Young was born on June 21, 1911. Kay trained at the Winnipeg General Hospital and became a registered nurse. About 1936, at 25 years of age, she accepted a nursing position in New York with a major investment banking firm. It was at this time that she met Betty ("B") Jones, who worked at this firm as a secretary. Betty became a lifelong friend. Not long after the war began in 1939, Kay tried to join the Canadian Army and even went to London to sign up. Initially, she was unable to enlist, but did work in England on an estate that had been donated for use as a medical facility. In 1944, she did enlist as a lieutenant, and was sent with the Canadian Army to North Africa.

After the war, Kay attended Columbia University and earned a Bachelor of Science. She worked for a major New York hospital in Manhattan for the rest of her career, until she retired about 1975. Except for the period of time when she was overseas during the war, Kay shared accommodation with B Jones at 4301 – 169th Street, Flushing, New York, from the late 1930s until about 1983, when she accepted a private nursing assignment in Australia for a year. The Flushing house was originally B's parents' home.

By the late 1980s, Kay's home was 370 Curtis Road, Bridgewater, Connecticut. She was a well-regarded and much-liked lady. Kay died, at 84 years of age, in Middletown, New York, on March 8, 1996.

Eileen Barber (Young)

Eileen Somerville Young was born on September 22, 1914. Eileen married Stanley Garfield Barber, in Winnipeg, on January 9, 1942. Stan was born in Winnipeg on January 10, 1916. Eileen enjoyed gardening, cross-country skiing, quilt making, bridge, and was active in St. Andrew's River Heights United Church.

Stan served in the Royal Canadian Air Force as a leading aircraftman on the west coast during World War Two. Stan received a postsecondary education in accounting, and worked for the City of Winnipeg in the finance and treasury department for most of his career. The couple had two children who were born in Winnipeg: Stephen Garfield Barber (b. December 10, 1942) and Catherine Frances Barber (b. November 24, 1947). The family lived for many years at 165 Lanark Street. Eileen died, at age 81, in Winnipeg, on October 22, 1995, and Stan passed away, at 90 years of age, in the Deer Lodge Hospital in Winnipeg, on October 8, 2006.

Hume Young

Hume Blake Young was born on May 30, 1919. Chapter 23 is dedicated to Hume and his family.

Fran Jones (Young)

Frances Flood Young was born on September 19, 1923. She married Albert Kirsten Jones (b. Bayonne, New Jersey January 3, 1910) in Ellenville, New York, on January 3, 1949. The family lived at 16 Lake Avenue, Middletown, New York. Fran and Al had two children, both born in Middletown: Richard Winfree Jones (b. September 19, 1949) and Arlene Kay Jones (b. August 12, 1950). Franny trained at the Salvation Army Hospital in Winnipeg and became a registered nurse. She received her U.S. citizenship at Newburgh, New York, in July 1957.

Al Jones was a major in the U.S. Army and served in both World War Two and the Korean War. He later worked as an administrative officer with New York State's highway department.

Al Jones died, at age 78, in October 1988. Fran died of lung cancer, at 76 years of age, on August 12, 2000. She was predeceased unexpectedly by her son, Richard, on May 21, 2000, at age 50. Arlene Rushing (Jones) died in Orlando, Florida, at 65 years of age, on October 16, 2015.

Bruce Young

Somerville Bruce Young was born on April 6, 1925. Bruce served as a pilot officer in the RCAF in 1944–45. He graduated from the University of Manitoba with a Doctor of Medicine in 1952, and later specialized to become a radiologist. Bruce began his internship in Vancouver's Shaughnessy Hospital in 1952.

Bruce married Olive Marion Oxland (b. Coaldale, Alberta, November 1, 1925) in Victoria, B.C., on May 29, 1954. Olive grew up in Lethbridge and graduated with a Bachelor of Science from the University of Alberta. She worked for the Alberta provincial government and the University of Alberta before taking a position with Shaughnessy Hospital's laboratory in 1951.

Bruce and Olive met in 1953 while working at Shaughnessy Hospital. For much of his working career, Bruce and Olive lived at 6187 Marguerite



July 1957 Lower Fort Garry (L-R) back—Bruce, David, & Hume Young; mid—Joan Wilson, Eileen Barber; front—Kay, Walter, Frances Young & Fran Jones.

Street, Vancouver. He practiced in the Lower Mainland as a partner in a firm of radiologists until his retirement in 1992.

Bruce and Olive had three children, all born in Vancouver: Hume James Young (b. January 9, 1957), Gordon Bruce Young (b. May 8, 1959) and Heather Dianne Young (born on December 2, 1966 and died of leukemia, at 9 years of age, on February 7, 1976). Bruce enjoyed hunting, fishing, golfing, gardening and bird watching. Bruce had a good sense of humour. He was a kind, gentle man who was genuinely concerned for the welfare of others. Bruce died in Richmond, B.C., at age 85, on June 18, 2010.

Joan Wilson (Young)

Barbara Joan Young was born on May 7, 1927. After graduating from the University of Manitoba with a Bachelor of Science in home economics, Joan married David Nathan Wilson in Rapid City, Manitoba, on March 27, 1947. David was born on his parents' half-section farm near Rapid City on April 22, 1917. He completed high school in 1933 and then worked on the family farm. In 1939, he signed up with the Canadian Armed Forces in the Radar unit. After a few months in each of Winnipeg and England for training, he was posted to Ceylon, then Calcutta for two years and eventually to northern



July 1990—Young family siblings L-R Hume (71), Kay (79), Fran (66), Bruce (65), Eileen (75), Joan (63) & David (82) Young

Burma, where he remained until 1945. After the war, he graduated with an agricultural diploma from the University of Manitoba.

Joan and David Wilson started their married life on a farm near Minnedosa, Manitoba. This farm was purchased in 1947 from David's dad. A dozen years later, David accepted an offer to work for a farm credit organization in Virden, where the family lived. In 1968, David Wilson moved with his family to Winnipeg to work in a more senior role with this company. For more than forty years, their home was 638 Beaverbrook Street. David retired in 1982. As a boy and a young man, David played baseball and hockey, and in the later years, he was a keen curler and a good golfer.

Joan and David Wilson had three children: Patricia Joan Wilson (b. December 5, 1949), John David Wilson (b. May 12, 1951) and Margot Ann Wilson (b. March 22, 1964).

Joan died from cancer on September 9, 2007, at age 80, and David passed away on January 12, 2013, at 95 years of age. Both died in Winnipeg.

Hume Blake Young and Mary Elinor Hopper

Hume Young was born in Winnipeg on May 30, 1919 (Chapter 22). He (23) married Elinor Hopper (20) on July 11, 1942 in Winnipeg (Chapter 21). My parents met on October 4, 1938, during “freshie” activities at the University of Manitoba, and dated throughout their time at university. Mom and Dad were married for 68 years.

Dad was named after a family member on his mother’s side, Hume Blake (pages 82 to 86). He attended Laura Secord School, and later, Gordon Bell High School. He earned a Bachelor of Science in civil engineering from the University of Manitoba in 1941 and was senior stick of his graduating class. Senior stick is similar to president of a Canadian university student association.

Dad worked as a purchasing agent for the Aluminum Company of Canada in British Guiana for about a year, before signing up as a pilot officer with the Royal Canadian Air Force in 1942. He took navigational training in four cities over several weeks, but discovered he was unable to be a navigator because of motion sickness.

In 1943, Dad became an aeronautical engineer after a six-month course, and was posted to Vancouver to supervise the overhaul and maintenance of aircraft. By the end of the war, his rank was flying officer. For five years, my parents rented part of a Vancouver home at 3163 West 3rd Avenue, near



Elinor Hopper and Hume Young, circa 1940, on the steps of the Young family's St. Laurent cottage.

Trutch Street (now Musqueamview Street). In 1945, Dad accepted a job with the City of Vancouver, and later, worked for two years at Swan Wooster, a well-known consulting engineering firm on the west coast at the time.

On Friday, April 30, 1948, Mom, Dad, brother Dave and I left Vancouver by train for Winnipeg. We lived with my grandparents on Arlington Street for six months. My parents bought a lot that spring, and Dad immediately began building the family home at 500 Brock Street, in south Winnipeg. Dad did most of the work himself, whenever possible. While work was needed over the years to finish the house, it was ready for occupancy by the Young family that November. Mom and Dad would stay in this house for 60 years, until they moved into supported living accommodation, on December 1, 2008.

In the fall of 1948, Dad started work with the City of Winnipeg where he worked for 34 years in different positions, until his retirement, at age 63, in December 1982. When he retired, Dad was head of the works and operations department for the City of Winnipeg.

In the summer of 1953, the family rented a cottage at Brereton Lake. My parents fell in love with the area, and decided to look for lake front property. They found what they were looking for nearby at Lot 2, Block 5, Red Rock Lake, in the Whiteshell Provincial Park, in eastern Manitoba, not far from the Ontario border. During the winter, Dad prepared the cottage flooring, walls and roof in the basement of 500 Brock. Most of the cottage was assembled on the May long weekend in 1954, and over the next few weekends. The lot had been cleared and the footings had been poured the previous year. Dave and I helped out with clearing the lot, at a penny a load, and earned \$1.50 between us! In the 1960s, the cottage was expanded. By this time, electricity and propane heating were in use, but the outhouse was still a needed fixture up the “Navajo Trail.” Indoor plumbing arrived later.

The cottage next door, on Lot 1, was built in the 1950s by Dick and Doris Cook, and is now owned by their children, Janice Jones and Richard Cook. The Cooks are descendants of Bishop John McLean and Kathleen Flood (Chapter 16).

Over the years, Red Rock became an important family institution. Everyone has their own special memories of activities such as waterskiing, blueberry picking, catching and releasing turtles, hiking, playing on the “mountain,” Monopoly and canoeing—to name a few. Dad patiently taught



Red Rock Lake.

each of his children, and those grandchildren who came to the lake, how to water ski. Mom, and any school age children, would typically stay for the entire summer, and Dad, when he was working, would commute from the city on weekends. Often, family and friends stayed at the cottage too. In later years, grandchildren got to enjoy the lake on visits as much as their parents had as children.

In 1988, Mom had each of her children prepare a narrative of their reflections on the cottage over the years. Her reflections included the following:

The best thing about summer cottages is that without radio, T.V., and the corner 7-up store, and without Community endeavours, boys play with girls, organize games and activities that they invent. Best thing is that they have TIME. Time to lie on their backs and look at clouds and use that priceless possession that most small children have in abundance and that is imagination.

Throughout his adult life, Dad loved to work on home renovation projects. He did his own electrical, plumbing and construction work.

In the early 1950s, Dad made an “unsinkable” duck boat that was used for many years at the cottage, and for hunting. Hume was an avid member of the Waverley Skeet Club and a hunter, especially for ducks and prairie chicken. In 1959, at 40, Hume learned to play the bagpipes. This became an important part of his life. He enjoyed playing in bands, at the lake and at family weddings. His first band was the Queen’s Own Cameron Highlanders of Canada. Dave and I played in the QOCH’s band early in Dad’s bagpipng career. In the 1960s and 1970s, Dad was very interested in genealogy and actively researched his family’s history.

Dad also took a jewelry course and made beautiful gold pieces for family members, including double knotted rings and pendants, and hummingbird pendants. Activities such as wine making and tropical fish also enjoyed short periods of enthusiasm. After retirement, Dad took up golf, which he discovered he had a passion for. He also learned to windsurf at this time.

When he was 83 years old, in 2002, Dad could still be found waterskiing at Red Rock!



Hume, 1989 at Red Rock.

Elinor Young (Hopper)

Mary Elinor Hopper was born on November 8, 1921 at the Misericordia Hospital in Winnipeg. Her parents were Eunice Cuthbert and Clark Hopper (Chapter 21). Throughout her school years, she sang in her aunt's choir at Young United Church at Broadway and in the Festival Choir. British adjudicators travelled to Winnipeg every spring to judge this music festival.

Mom attended La Verendrye Elementary in Winnipeg, except for Grade 5 (1931–32), when she went to Marcy Elementary School in Minneapolis, because her father was studying at the university. She returned to Winnipeg and attended Earl Grey Junior High, Kelvin High School and the University of Manitoba. She graduated in 1942, with a Bachelor of Science in home economics, and was lady stick (equivalent to senior stick for men) for her faculty in her graduating year. At university, Mom took part in table tennis, tennis, badminton, volleyball, basketball, and track and field. She was very proud to earn an athletic letter (H) for her ability in sports. Mom was a member of the Gamma Phi Beta sorority.

Mom grew up in the Great Depression. Spending cautiously and saving were part of her very being, and helped her to raise six children on one income.



Elinor at 39 in 1960.



Elinor and Don, August 24, 1991.

Mom loved books. She was an avid reader and could easily read a book in a day. A public library was located across the street, and she was able to exchange books frequently. Some of her other interests over the years included playing the piano, bowling, copper tooling, ceramics, oil painting and bridge. Mom had epilepsy, but as with most things, she took her condition in stride.

Mom was a warm and loving person, who was dedicated to her family, and she had a good sense of humour.

For more than twenty years after Dad retired, my parents rotated during the seasons between Brock Street, Red Rock Lake and Wagons West, an RV park in Tucson, Arizona.

Although he never smoked, Dad died from throat cancer, at 91 years of age, on December 7, 2010, in the Riverview Health Centre in Winnipeg. Mom passed away peacefully, at age 89, only seventeen days later on December 24, 2010, in Winnipeg's Victoria General Hospital. They were cremated and interred in the Chapel Lawn Cemetery.

Information is provided below on the couple's six children, 16 grandchildren and, to date, 20 great-grandchildren.

Nancy Elinor Young Martel

Nancy was born in Winnipeg on September 6, 1962. She graduated from Kelvin High School in 1980, and earned a Bachelor of Education and Bachelor of Human Ecology from the University of Manitoba in 1988. Nancy married Michael Wayne Martel on August 24, 1991, in Winnipeg at the Wildewood Club (Chapter 11). Mike was born on March 13, 1963 in Altona, Manitoba, grew up in Winnipeg and graduated from Vincent Massey Collegiate in 1981. He earned a Bachelor of Science in forestry (Honours) from Lakehead University in 1988.

Nancy was a school teacher for several years, and Mike worked in the forest industry throughout his career. He retired in 2021. Nancy and Mike have moved throughout the years for various career opportunities. They have lived in The Pas, Manitoba (1988–1991); Meadow Lake, Saskatchewan (1991–2002); Pine Falls, Manitoba (2002–2005); North Bay, Ontario (2005–2014); Beaconsfield, Quebec (2014–2018) and Thunder Bay, Ontario, since 2018. The Martels have enjoyed each location, made many friends and have been involved in various groups and activities over the years.

Nancy and Mike have three children, all born in Meadow Lake,



May 1989 for Hume's 70th at 62 Sandra Bay, Winnipeg—L-R Jane, Donald, David, Doug, Hume, Nancy and Andrew, with Elinor seated.

Saskatchewan; they all graduated from Widdifield Secondary School in North Bay, Ontario.

- **Blake Warren Balfour Martel** (b. September 7, 1992); earned a Bachelor of Applied Science in mining engineering, in 2017, from Queen's University. Blake has worked as a mining engineer since 2017, and currently works in the nuclear energy industry. Blake and Carrie Lynn Poteck were married on February 19, 2023. Carrie was born in Toronto, on June 22, 1992. She earned a Bachelor of Arts (Honours), with a major in media and information, at Western University in 2014, and a Master of Education from the University of Toronto in 2016. Carrie worked as a teacher until 2022, and is currently an education technology consultant. Blake and Carrie share a home in Richmond Hill, Ontario.
- **Michael Bruce Martel** (b. April 9, 1994); earned a Bachelor of Engineering in aerospace, in 2017, from Carleton University. Bruce has worked as a mechanical engineer since 2017 and lives in Thunder Bay, Ontario.
- **Lesley Elinor Young Martel** (b. October 6, 1995); earned a



December 2021, Bruce, Lesley, Mike, Nancy, Blake, Carrie

Bachelor of Arts (Honours), with a major in political science, in 2018, from Carleton University (one term in Reims, France). Lesley also earned a Human Resource Management diploma at Centennial College in 2019. She lives in Toronto and is an assistant director of operations for a youth camp.

Andrew Duncan Young

Andrew was born in Winnipeg on September 17, 1960. He married Vicki Jean Hume on August 25, 1984, in Melbourne, Quebec. Melbourne is about 125 kilometres east of Montreal. Vicki was born in Montreal, on August 27, 1959.

Andrew and Vicki have two children:

- Jeffrey Hume Young (b. June 9, 1993 Barrie, Ontario)
- Lindsay Elizabeth Young (b. May 23, 1996 Winnipeg)

Andrew graduated from Kelvin High School in 1978, and in 1983, he earned a Bachelor of Science with honours in zoology from the University of Manitoba. He received a Master of Science in zoology in 1985, and in 1990, a Bachelor of Education from McGill University. In 1991, Andrew was

awarded a Doctor of Philosophy in zoology from the University of Western Ontario (UWO) in London.

Andrew and Vicki lived in Barrie, Ontario, and worked in Greater Toronto, after he graduated from UWO, before moving to Winnipeg, about 1995. Andrew has taught elementary school for several years.

In 2011, Andrew and Vicki bought the Red Rock Lake cottage from my parents' estate.

Douglas Bruce Young

Doug was born in Winnipeg on April 7, 1958. He graduated from Grant Park High School in 1976, and obtained his Bachelor of Education from the University of Manitoba in 1980.

Doug married Marian Jean Reade on July 24, 1982, at St. Andrew's River Heights United Church in Winnipeg. Marian was born in Winnipeg on June 5, 1959, and graduated from Charleswood Collegiate in 1977. In 1981, she earned a Bachelor of Education from the University of Manitoba.

Doug and Marian worked as dedicated professionals, teaching elementary school in northern Manitoba for 36 and 35 years, respectively. They both retired in 2016, and now live in Winnipeg.

Doug and Marian have two children:

- **Scott Thomas Hume Young** (b. August 19, 1988 The Pas, Manitoba); graduated in 2011 from the University of Manitoba with a Bachelor of Commerce (Honours), including one year at the University of Montpellier, France. Scott has also completed all the courses and examinations required for a Bachelor of Computer Science degree from Cambridge's Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

Scott has lived in Vancouver since graduating from university. He has remained financially independent by successfully operating his own business. Scott's business is focused on helping people to learn more effectively by making a variety of products available to subscribers. One of Scott's e-books was translated into Mandarin and has sold well in China. One of his newest products is a book, *ULTRALEARNING*. Another book is in the works.

On May 26, 2018, Scott married Zorica (Zoey) Tomovska

in Penticton, B.C. The couple met at university on the first day of calculus class. Zoey was born on October 14, 1988, in what is now North Macedonia. She is a graduate of the University of Manitoba with a Bachelor of Commerce (Honours), and a chartered professional accountant. Scott and Zoey have two Vancouver-born children: Thomas Tomovski Young (b. January 30, 2020) and Julia Tomovska Young (b. February 3, 2023).

- **Megan Phyllis Elinor Young** (b. December 26, 1990 The Pas, Manitoba); Megan graduated from Margaret Barbour Collegiate in The Pas. To broaden her experience, she participated in a student exchange program and attended a high school in Denmark for one year, immediately after graduating from her Manitoba high school. Megan holds a Bachelor of Environmental Design (Interiors) from the University of Manitoba. After graduating from U. of M., she worked for 18 months in the field of design, and then travelled on her own throughout South America for a year. In 2019, Megan



December 2021, Zoey, Scott, Thomas, Marion, Doug, Megan

completed her Master of Architecture degree from the University of Toronto, and now lives in Vancouver. She is currently working and studying to qualify as a licensed architect.

Jane Frances Young

Jane was born in Winnipeg's Grace Hospital on July 29, 1950, the year of the city's last major flood. Jane graduated from Kelvin High School in 1968, and obtained an Occupational Therapy diploma, in May 1971, from the University of Manitoba. In 1981, she graduated from the University of Toronto, with a Bachelor of Science in Rehabilitation Medicine (Occupational Therapy).

Jane is a talented artist with many fine paintings to her credit. She earned a Visual Arts certificate, in 2010, from the Vancouver Island School of Art in Victoria. Jane married David Murray Williamson on December 23, 1971, in Winnipeg. David was born in Toronto, on July 8, 1949.

Dave graduated in 1970, with a Bachelor of Commerce from the University of Manitoba, and started that year with Price Waterhouse & Co. in Winnipeg to work toward his chartered accountancy designation. David went on to become a senior tax partner with Price Waterhouse. Jane and Dave moved with Dave's career, from Winnipeg to Paris (1974–1976), Toronto (1976–1981), Montreal (1981–1996) and Calgary (1996–1997).

Jane and Dave had a log home built on Lac St. Victor in the Laurentians of Quebec. They owned this second home from 1988 until 1996, when they sold it to move to Calgary. Jane and Dave parted company in 1997. Initially, Jane moved back to Montreal from Calgary, and lived in Pointe Claire again for two years, before moving back to Calgary in 1999. Jane and Dave formally divorced on May 23, 2000. She relocated to Victoria in 2006, and in 2012, she moved to the Lower Mainland of British Columbia.

Jane and Dave have three children:

- **Neil David Williamson** (b. February 6, 1980 Oakville Trafalgar Memorial Hospital); Neil attended Western Canada High School in Calgary and John Abbott CEGEP in Ste. Anne de Bellevue, Quebec. He graduated with a Bachelor of Science in computers and biology, in 2002, from Queen's University in Kingston, Ontario.

Neil married Jessica Ann Appling of Lincoln, Nebraska, on August 11, 2001, in Kingston. Jessica was born in Lincoln, on March

23, 1981. Neil and Jessica live in Toronto with their two children: Haddie Walker Oswin Williamson (b. December 19, 2015 Toronto) and Kai Grayson Digory Williamson (b. August 16, 2018 Toronto).

- **Heather Jane Williamson** (b. January 22, 1983 Royal Victoria Hospital in Montreal); Heather graduated, in 2001, from Western Canada High School in Calgary. In 2007, she earned a Bachelor of Design from the University of Alberta in Edmonton. She has worked since graduation as a graphic designer.

Heather Williamson and Christopher Todd (b. December 20, 1984 Calgary) have four Calgary-born daughters:

- Charlotte Hayden Todd (b. March 20, 2013)
 - Blake Aurora Todd (b. September 14, 2014)
 - Amelia Edison Todd (b. December 6, 2016)
 - Joslyn Riley Todd (b. August 5, 2019)
- **Christine Nancy Williamson** (b. May 15, 1987 Royal Victoria Hospital in Montreal); Christine graduated, in 2005, from Rundle College Academy in Calgary. She attended Mount Royal College



2011 L-R Heather, Dave, Christine, Jane and Neil.

and the University of Victoria. Christine obtained a Bachelor of Child and Youth Care from the University of the Fraser Valley in Abbotsford, B.C., in 2012.

Christine married Benjamin James Henry Cooper on June 23, 2012, in Vancouver. Ben was born in White Rock, B.C., on November 9, 1985. Ben and Christine live in the Fraser Valley, about 50 kilometres east of Vancouver. They have two daughters born in the Langley Memorial Hospital:

- Hailey Charlotte Jane Cooper (b. September 25, 2014)
- Stella Frances Ann Cooper (b. May 28, 2017)

David Clark Young

Dave was born on September 19, 1947, in Vancouver's Grace Hospital and grew up in Winnipeg. He attended Kelvin High School. Dave and I were members of the Delta Kappa Epsilon fraternity.

Dave was a member of Manitoba's four-man rowing team that won a silver medal at the 1969 Halifax Canada Games. He earned a Bachelor of Science in 1968 from the University of Manitoba, and received his Doctor of Medicine in 1972 from Manitoba's Medical School. Dave practiced family medicine, in the Fort Garry area of south Winnipeg, for 27 years.

He met Nancy Joan Elliott during his years at university, and they were married in Winnipeg on July 2, 1970. Nancy was born in Winnipeg on October 20, 1947. She earned a Bachelor of Arts and a Certificate of Education from the University of Manitoba. Nancy enjoyed a successful teaching career for many years at Balmoral Hall School. Their family home was 62 Sandra Bay in Fort Garry, in south Winnipeg, for nearly three decades.

Dave and Nancy have three children who were born and grew up in Winnipeg:

- Sarah Jane Young (b. May 5, 1972)
 - Peter Elliott Young (b. May 30, 1974)
 - Kate Judith Young (b. July 21, 1977)
-
- **Sarah Young** married Gordon Norman Finlayson in Winnipeg on September 13, 2003. Gord was born on July 1, 1975, in Victoria, and raised in the Lower Mainland of British Columbia. Sarah

received a Bachelor of Arts from the University of Manitoba, and her Doctor of Medicine from Queen's University in Kingston, Ontario. She completed her internship in Victoria in 1998, and moved to Vancouver, in 1999, for her residency. Sarah is a gynecologic oncology surgeon, and head of gynecologic oncology surgery for Vancouver General Hospital and the University of British Columbia.

Gord earned a Bachelor of Science from Queen's University and a Doctor of Medicine from the University of British Columbia. Gord is a critical care specialist as well as an anesthesiologist. Both Sarah and Gord enjoy significant teaching positions in UBC's Faculty of Medicine, and each of them has received awards for this work, including Sarah's 2022 Killam Teaching Excellence Award. The Finlaysons own a second home in Whistler.

Sarah and Gord have two Vancouver-born daughters:

- Lucy Elliott Finlayson (b. February 21, 2007)
 - Rose Kate Finlayson (b. December 24, 2008)
- **Peter Young** married Susan Johanne Hoeschen in Winnipeg, on December 22, 2003. Johanne was born in Winnipeg on November 7, 1975, and holds Bachelor of Arts and Bachelor of Law degrees from the University of Manitoba.

Peter graduated with a Bachelor of Commerce from the University of Manitoba. Peter articulated with KPMG LLP in Winnipeg to earn his chartered accountancy designation. After obtaining his CA in 2000, he transferred with KPMG to their Vancouver office. Peter later held executive positions with two companies in the Lower Mainland. In 2015, Peter and his family moved to California. Peter is president of a Canadian-owned John Deere dealership that operates from seven locations on the North Coast and in the Central Valley of California. Johanne serves as legal counsel for a technology company.

Peter and Johanne have two Vancouver-born daughters:

- Riley Jane Young (b. February 26, 2006)
- Claire Lauren Young (b. July 31, 2008)

- **Kate Young** married Justin Stirling Thompson in Kananaskis, Alberta, on July 2, 2006. Justin was born in Calgary on August 2, 1973. Kate holds a Bachelor of Environmental Design from the University of Manitoba, and Master in Architecture from the University of Calgary.

Kate is president and chief executive officer of a community land and infrastructure organization. In 2014, she was voted among the “Top 40 under 40” by *Calgary Avenue* magazine. In 2017, in recognition of Canada’s 150th anniversary as a country, Kate was honoured by Calgary’s YWCA for being one of the top 150 women in Calgary over the past 150 years. In 2022, Kate was awarded Alberta’s Queen’s Platinum Jubilee Medal for her contribution to Alberta.

Justin has a Bachelor of Science from the University of Western Ontario, and a Master of Public Administration from Carleton University. He is the executive director for a land conservation society. Justin and Kate have a ranch in southwest Alberta, where they love to be when time allows.



2022 Raspberry Island, L-R back; Sarah, Dave, Nancy, Justin, middle; Gord, Charlie, Lucy, Claire, Peter, front; Johanne, Rose, Hugo, Riley, Kate

Kate and Justin have two Calgary-born sons:

- Charlie David Thompson (b. October 23, 2007)
- Hugo Peter Thompson (b. December 27, 2009)

In 1995, Dave and Nancy bought Raspberry Island, an eight-acre property on the Winnipeg River, near Minaki, Ontario. Minaki is about 250 kilometres east of Winnipeg, and 40 kilometres north of Kenora.

Under our cousin John Wilson's (Chapter 22) leadership and using Dad's structural beam design, Dave and a few family members and friends built a cottage on the island in 1996, and later, they built a separate sleeping cabin designed by Kate. Raspberry Island continues to be a wonderful family gathering place.

Nancy and Dave enjoy travelling. In 1982, when they were 35 years old, the family left home for a year. During part of that year, Dave worked in a rural Nigerian hospital, while Sarah and Peter attended boarding school.

In 2004, Dave and Nancy left Winnipeg, travelling and working in Australia, New Zealand, Nunavut, Banff and several rural Canadian communities before landing in Vancouver in 2008.

Dave and Nancy enjoy inn-to-inn walking trips in Britain, Ireland and on the Continent. They also volunteer with Habitat for Humanity's Global Village.

Donald Walter Young

I was born on December 2, 1945, in Vancouver's Grace Hospital, and grew up in Winnipeg. I married Roberta Jean McKnight on December 27, 1967, in St. Andrew's River Heights United Church in south Winnipeg. Robin was born in Winnipeg on November 25, 1946. Robin and I met on Saturday, August 28, 1965, at Victoria Beach, Manitoba.

Like most of my siblings, I attended Brock Corydon Elementary, River Heights Junior High School and Kelvin High School. After a short period at the University of Manitoba, I enrolled as a chartered accountancy student and articulated with Price Waterhouse & Co. in Winnipeg. At that time, the national CA uniform final exam (UFE) was offered once a year, and totalled 24 hours, spread evenly over six days, with half the writers passing each year. The "intermediate" exams, that preceded the UFEs, normally experienced a lower pass rate than the final exam.



Robin and Don, July 1997.

In December 1970, I transferred to Price Waterhouse's Vancouver office. I accepted an opportunity in November 1973 to work with a successful, international mining company based in Vancouver, Placer Development Ltd. (now Barrick Gold Corp.).

After three years with Placer, I joined a small Canadian chartered accountancy firm, Ernst & Ernst, in Vancouver, in September 1976. Through a combination of name changes and two large mergers in the 1980s, the firm became today's professional services firm, KPMG LLP.

Throughout my career with KPMG, I was actively engaged with clients in the audit group. In addition, I transitioned over a few years to work as a partner in the management consulting division for a couple of years until it was sold in 1999. I enjoyed my 26 years in the partnership, retiring as a senior equity partner, on September 30, 2005 (the firm's year-end).

I have been pleased to serve the community and my profession as a member of six provincial and national not-for-profit organizations' governing boards. This service included eight years on the council of the Institute of Chartered Accountants of British Columbia, including one year as president.

In 1992, I was elected a Fellow of the Institute for providing service with distinction to the community and the profession. In 2015, my accounting association combined with two other accounting bodies and changed my designation to chartered professional accountant.

After I retired from KPMG, Robin and I took a two-month vacation in the fall of 2005 in Australia. On my return, I was appointed to my first board of directors of a publicly listed company in early 2006. I served on a few corporate boards over the next fifteen years. Normally, I served on only two or three boards at the same time to keep this work to a limited, part-time activity. I retired from my last board, Dundee Precious Metals Inc., after 11 years in May 2021. My career as a corporate director was a rewarding experience.

Robin attended high school at Vincent Massey Collegiate in Fort Garry, Winnipeg. She graduated in 1967 with a Bachelor of Arts from the University of Manitoba. Robin began teaching high school in September 1967, after starting a Certificate in Education program that was taken in summer, and completed by 1969. She retired from teaching at the end of 1970 when we moved to Vancouver. Robin was very happy to be able to stay home with the children when they were young.

In 1984, she enrolled in a two-year legal assistant course at Capilano College (now Capilano University). After graduation, Robin worked for Ladner Downs' (now Borden Ladner Gervais) litigation group. She retired on December 31, 2002.

Robin and I bought our first home in February 1972, after about a year of



Whistler.



2020 and 2021—Don, Whistler Mountain

living in south Vancouver. That home was 4396 Parliament Crescent in North Vancouver. The family moved to 5150 Ashfield Road in West Vancouver in March 1981.

Our second home is in Whistler. We purchased the land in July 1995 and then set about to design and have a log home built. We were able to start using the cabin in July 1997. We use both homes extensively, year round, as they are only a little over an hour's drive apart.

Our daughter **Tracey Anne Young** was born in Vancouver's Grace Hospital on October 24, 1971. She attended Hillside Secondary School and West Vancouver Secondary School, and enrolled at Queen's University in Kingston, Ontario, in 1989. Tracey graduated with a Bachelor of Commerce (Hons.) in April 1993, and began to article with Deloitte & Touche LLP that year. She received her chartered accountancy designation in the spring of 1996. During six years with Deloitte, Tracey worked in their Vancouver, Brisbane, New York and London, England offices.

Tracey married Christopher David Good on July 19, 1997, in West Vancouver. Chris was born in Vancouver's Grace Hospital on June 18, 1970. After graduating with top honours, both from West Vancouver Secondary School in 1988 and from Commerce at Queen's University in 1992, Chris completed a Master of Arts in economics at the University of British Columbia

the next year. He received his Doctor of Philosophy in financial econometrics from Harvard University in December 1996.

Chris joined a New York-based investment-banking firm in January 1997 that he continues to work for. The Good family lived in Manhattan from July 1997 until December 2006, except for one year in London. In January 2007, after having been promoted to managing director that fall, Chris accepted a position with his firm in London, and the family has been happy to call London home ever since. Chris is now responsible for his company's client risk management of equities, fixed income, commodities and foreign exchange in Europe, Asia and the Middle East. He has now celebrated more than 25 years with his firm.

Tracey and Chris have two wonderful children, both born in Manhattan's New York Presbyterian Hospital:

- Abigail Sarah Good (b. July 22, 1999)
- Malcolm Hugh Good (b. January 8, 2003)

In 2016, each of the Good family became British citizens. All four continue to be Canadian citizens, and the children are American too.

Tracey has served on the governing boards of several associations and charities while living in London.

Tracey and Abigail are avid karate competitors. They have each earned their third dan (third black belt) as well as teaching and refereeing qualifications. Abigail has been a member of the Japanese Karate Association's England Squad for 10 years, with many medals at the national and European championships. She also represented England in the tri-annual JKA World Championships in Japan (2014) and Ireland (2017).

After starting her undergraduate education at the University of Tsukuba in Japan, about 65 kilometres northeast of Tokyo, Abigail elected to continue her studies at the New College of the Humanities in London, where she graduated in 2022 with a Bachelor of Arts (Hons). She is now attending classes to earn a Juris Doctor degree, at the University of Washington's School of Law in Seattle.

Malcolm started university in 2021 at the University of Essex, about 100 kilometres northeast of London. He accepted an offer to continue his studies at the University of London in the fall of 2023. Malcolm's studies include a focus on politics. In recent years, he has been active with Scouts, Model United

Nations and fencing. He is an Eagle Scout, who enjoys hiking, camping and boating activities. Throughout high school, Malcolm participated in the annual Model United Nations program, in the Netherlands.

Our daughter **Jennifer Robyn Young** was born on April 28, 1973, in North Vancouver's Lions Gate Hospital. After graduating from West Vancouver Secondary School, she attended UBC and graduated in 1996 with a Bachelor of Science, and shortly after, she completed a two-year diploma program in Environmental Studies at the British Columbia Institute of Technology (BCIT).

Jennifer is an enthusiastic traveller, who combines her photography skills with her adventures on the road around the world. In 2015, she took a six-month leave of absence from her work to travel on her own to various countries. This extended trip included China, Mongolia, South Africa, Madagascar, Maldives, India, Nepal and Sri Lanka, often with pre-arranged work as a volunteer on wildlife- and community-related projects.

Jen has strong artistic talents that she has put to very good use over the years in woodworking, pottery and painting as well as photography. After working for an environmental engineering firm for 17 years, Jen now enjoys her career, as a fisheries biologist, with the federal government, helping to protect the environment.

Our son, **John David Young**, was born on January 7, 1976, in North Vancouver's Lions Gate Hospital. Dave graduated in 1994 from West Vancouver Secondary School. Dave holds a Bachelor of Arts from the University of British Columbia, and a diploma from BCIT's Information Technology Coop Program. He has worked for a major wealth management firm for more than 20 years. His current role is senior manager, global asset management infrastructure.

Dave is an excellent skier and an enthusiastic cyclist. He has been proud to play a leadership role for more than 10 years to raise money for cancer research through a major biking event. Dave not only participates in this important community activity each year, but he has been successful in recruiting many others to join.

Dave married Kathryn Elizabeth Lewis in San Francisco on August 29, 2014. Katie was born in Victoria, B.C., on October 24, 1982, and grew up there. She holds Bachelor and Master of Journalism degrees from Carleton University.



Hawaii, 2018 L-R seated Abigail, Sophie, Don, Clark, Robin and Malcolm; standing Katie, Dave, Chris, Tracey and Jen

Katie has worked as an editor with a news organization, and has gained experience with a variety of news outlets in several countries. Her work awards include the Goff Penny Award for Young Canadian Journalists, the Diane King Stuemmer Fellowship and the IDRC Award for International Development Journalism.

Dave and Katie have two delightful children, born in Vancouver's St. Paul's Hospital, on May 31, 2015:

- Sophie Claire Young
- Clark Thomas Young

Dave and Katie have lived separate lives since August 2020.

In February 2018, our family joined Robin and me on the Big Island of Hawaii to celebrate our 50th wedding anniversary. Abigail came from Tokyo, Tracey, Chris and Malcolm travelled from London to join our Vancouver family residents in the middle of the Pacific. It was a wonderful family get-together.

